

Lancashire
Education Committee



County Library.

Book No. 995632

Class No. B

LANCASHIRE MUSEUM
LOCAL STUDIES COLLECTION

FOR REFERENCE
ONLY

LL 60

AUTHOR

ALSOP, C.

CLASS

G3

TITLE

The life of James
W. Alsop.

No.

49093325

LANCASHIRE COUNTY COUNCIL

This book should be returned on or before the latest date
shown above to the library from which it was borrowed

LIBRARY HEADQUARTERS, 143 CORPORATION STREET, PRESTON, PR1 8RH



a30118



026448690b

THE LIFE
OF
JAMES W. ALSOP



Elliott & Fry

Yours truly
J. W. Alsop

THE LIFE
OF
JAMES W. ALSOP

LL.D., B.A.

BY HIS WIFE

WITH AN INTRODUCTORY CHAPTER

BY

AUGUSTINE BIRRELL

AND

A NOTE ON EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL

BY

C. SYDNEY JONES



University Press of Liverpool Limited
Hodder and Stoughton Limited, London

1926

49093325

*Made and Printed in Great Britain by G. Tinsing & Co., Ltd.,
Liverpool, London and Prescott.*

02644869

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY - - - - -	vii
A NOTE ON EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL -	xv
CHAPTER I—1846-1876 - - - -	I
CHAPTER II—1876-1886 - - - -	31
CHAPTER III—1886-1904 - - - -	56
CHAPTER IV—1904-1911 - - - -	97
CHAPTER V—1911-1919 - - - -	151
CHAPTER VI—1919-1920 - - - -	215
CHAPTER VII—1920-1921 - - - -	232
CONCLUSION - - - - -	237

INTRODUCTORY

By AUGUSTINE BIRRELL

As the subject of this Memoir was with hardly an exception, one of the earliest, and certainly one of the dearest of my many friends, I have found it impossible to refuse his wife's request that I should contribute these few pages to her admirable biography—and yet really I am almost outside the picture she has drawn.

Alsop's life-work was in connection with Secondary Education, and with the foundation of the University of Liverpool in the year 1903.

As I left Liverpool for Cambridge in 1870, and never returned to it, save for one short and unsuccessful electioneering adventure in 1885, I had neither part nor lot in the labours, that eventually, after years of toil, crowned his efforts, and those of his Liverpool allies, with so much distinction.

Prior to 1868 I had some acquaintance with the Alsop family, who were our near neighbours in Edge Hill, but it was not until 1869, after he had entered the office of the Solicitor (Mr. Alfred, afterward Sir Alfred Billson) to whom at that date I was playing the part of a light-hearted articled clerk, that James and I became the great friends we ever afterwards remained.

Alsop in 1869 had already completed his articles (I never completed mine) and came into the office in Cook Street as a salaried managing clerk, and a most invaluable clerk he at once proved himself to be.

No reader of this remarkable Memoir can fail to be

struck with the passion for accurate knowledge, in many branches of mental activity, that from the first, seemed almost to consume this apparently ill-circumstanced but genuine scholar.

I used in those early days, much to his amusement, to compare him to Browning's 'Grammarian,' who

'Fierce as a dragon
Soul-hydroptic with a sacred thirst
Sucked at the flagon.'

Not that there was ever anything really 'fierce' about Alsop's passion for learning, for he was ever alive to the amenities of Literature, however light, and was only too eager to be left out of nothing that might feed the flames of his passion, and cause them to burn brighter and purer.

He had wanted very much, before he became a Solicitor, 'to proceed,' that is, I think, the correct biographical phrase, to the University of Cambridge, where I am sure he would have plucked some of the golden apples that grow in that Garden of Industry. But his stern duties in his own sorrow-stricken household, and the then general lack of opportunities for such as he, forbade, and he was condemned to live laborious nights as a private student for a degree of the London University.

And here it is only just to pause and say what an incalculable blessing the External Examinations of that University were, and still are, to young fellows in Alsop's plight all over England and Wales.

It is easy enough, and also agreeable enough for those who are conscious that their genius does not lie in the direction of stiff, written examinations to sneer at 'mere examinations,' without professional teaching behind them, and at Universities that confer degrees without requiring residence within the groves of the Academy—but though Degrees by themselves,

wherever and however obtained, are not of much value, nevertheless, well defined Courses of Study, lines of reading, lists of the best books in each department, the stimulus wrought by the desire to mark progress, the 'acid' test of recently acquired learning by heartless examination-papers, were of indescribable benefit to the lonely student, pursuing his evening studies in unlettered places. And such a student was Alsop.

I sometimes thought my old friend exaggerated the disadvantages he had suffered from in never being able 'to proceed' to Cambridge. Had he got there, he might, and probably would, have been tempted by tutorial proffers, to remain there—and then what a loss to Liverpool!

On the whole, I think, that on this occasion Providence was right in making my friend a graduate of the University of London, and in time one of the leading Solicitors in Liverpool.

As against this providential view there is but one argument. Alsop's tremendous 'private' studies undoubtedly threatened his health in later years. This risk he might not have run had he been able to go to Cambridge in 1865.

It was during two walking-tours in Scotland, one taken whilst I was still an articled clerk, and the other when I was a Cambridge Undergraduate (and had learnt to smoke) that I first became aware how bent my companion had become upon improving what he first taught me to call 'Secondary Education,' and how determined he was to do all that at any time he might be able, to make the paths of poor, and locally-tied, students easier for them than they had been for him.

Neither the grassy slopes of Ben Lomond, nor the more puzzling ascent of Ben Cruachan, nor even the craggy summit of Ben Nevis—mountains we had

proudly tackled on three successive Sabbaths—were always successful in keeping Alsop off his already favourite subject.

We were fortunate in this respect, one author supplied both our needs—Mr. Matthew Arnold. ‘We must organise our “Secondary Education,”’ Alsop would cry, quoting our one common Master, to which I would respond with a stanza from ‘Obermann once more,’ or with a few lines from ‘The Buried Life.’ My companion was easily infected with my devotion for Arnold’s poetry, and I can only hope that I did not long remain wholly indifferent to ‘Secondary Education.’

Looking back upon those years, I can now perceive what Unity of Purpose ran through my friend’s life.

It must not, however, be supposed that Alsop had not much to do on his own separate account before he could fulfil his heart’s desire. All his life he had to work hard in his own profession. He was not the sort of man to whom easy jobs are offered. His first step, and it was a long and difficult one, was to make for himself a commanding position as a Solicitor in Liverpool.

He was lucky in the choice of his profession. The business of a Solicitor is one where individual strength of character, and sound qualifications, tell in the beginning more than in most other vocations. A Solicitor who has already made a good connection, and is looking out for a junior partner, knows very well he cannot divide his business with a ‘duffer,’ and that legal knowledge, a love of hard work, and the sternest integrity, are worth far more than ‘money down.’

Mr. Enoch Harvey who was wise enough, relying on his own shrewd judgment, and on Mr. Billson’s strong recommendations, to offer Alsop a junior partnership without any premium, was, in 1871, well

known, highly accomplished, and the most elegant member of the legal profession in Liverpool. At first sight, one might have been indisposed to believe that this partnership would have long endured, but once Alsop set his foot in the office, Mr. Harvey discovered he had secured a prize. In due course the junior partner became the head of the firm, and in no long time had come to be regarded by the Bankers, Ship-owners, and Merchants of Liverpool, as one of the clearest intellects in the City, as Liverpool is now called.

Alsop studied Mercantile Law as he studied everything he was required to do with assiduity and affection, nor was it much law that he ever had to learn when in consultation with barristers, however eminent and costly, in their Chambers in London.

His health, necessitating as it did in late years, somewhat prolonged absences, troubled him not a little, but when his friend Stevens in time became *his* junior partner, the prosperity of the business remained unaffected.

Alsop's position in Liverpool as a learned lawyer, and a Solicitor of the highest repute, singled him out as the very man to take an active part in the procuration (no easy task) of a Charter for the new University ; nor is it necessary to add, how happy he was to fling his energies and his hopes, his time and his money, into a scheme he had long hugged to his heart.

But I must trespass no further on this part of the subject—the main action of Alsop's Epic.

I do not know that my old friend was what is called a 'popular' man, for as he had always worked his hardest, and viewed an idler, whether rich or poor, with unmixed contempt, so he expected his Co-Workers, not to be passengers in the boat, but to do their full share of the labour. This way of looking at things was not always found congenial by that

cheerful, numerous, and often it must be admitted humorous, class of 'Shirkers,' who are to be found in most places.

No one had closer friends than Alsop, and they were to be found in most of the Walks of Life. Wherever he went, on business or pleasure—and he loved a holiday, he made friends. On Swiss Mountains, and he was something of a climber, in Italian Cities, in the United States, at table d'hotes, by the wayside, he picked up friends and retained them for years. Even in a 'Hydro,' he is reported once to have made a friend.

Mrs. Alsop has enumerated many of her husband's closest friends, but had the list of his friends been made complete, it would have been a long one.

Alsop's labours for the University involved a great variety of work—for not only was there the preparation (in consultation with others) of the Charter, but there were enemies to be frustrated or appeased, patrons to be secured, rival institutions to be propitiated, a critical Commission to be satisfied, and, hardest of all, enthusiasms to be aroused in sluggish breasts. The *cui bono* folk, so detested by Dr. Johnson, grow like blackberries on the Lancashire hedges. What is the precise good of a University? Have we not got on very well without one? What is the matter with our Education, Secondary or otherwise? and so on.

In his dealings with all these different people, Alsop may have been compelled to study some of the arts of diplomacy, but I cannot suppose he ever earned much reputation as a crafty man; though, I daresay, he may have had sometimes to consort with 'interests,' he might on other occasions have avoided.

I account Alsop a happy man, since he succeeded in accomplishing what, outside the happiness of his own home, he desired most to accomplish for his fellow men :

' Some of us strive
' Not without action to die——'

but it seldom happens that our strivings along the paths we have chosen or which have been forced upon us are rewarded as his were by so clear-cut and enduring a result.

I know that what has led Mrs. Alsop to write this Memoir as she alone could, was the hope that it may come into the hands of young men and women to whom in times of despondency, when the *cui bono* spirit is sapping their energies, it may bring a measure of strength and even a breath of inspiration.

A NOTE ON EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL

By C. SYDNEY JONES

IT was I think in 1906, when I was elected a member of the Council of Liverpool University, that I first came in close contact with Mr. Alsop's educational work and began to realise how powerful an influence he wielded in the advancement of the welfare of the youth of Liverpool.

And after 1912, when I became a member of the Education Committee on election to the City Council, it became clearer every day how wide and deep was his interest in everything that concerned the Education of the City.

The early years of the twentieth century marked a new era in Education, and he was one of the first to take advantage of the new spirit.

Keenly interested as he had always been in the establishment of the University standard of Education in the midst of a commercial and industrial city, he realised that no modern University could completely fulfil all its proper functions while there was a hiatus between itself and the Elementary Schools. When, therefore, the 1902 Bill made possible and necessary the establishment of Secondary Schools in the Municipalities, he recognised that the hour of great possibilities had arrived, and he threw himself wholeheartedly and with all his well known vigour into the task of establishing a system of Secondary Schools in Liverpool which should be an example to the country of what a great city should strive to accomplish.

xvi EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL

Liverpool was, perhaps, exceptionally well situated for the experiment, for the ground was untilled.

No large Grammar School with its roots fixed in some previous century was in existence with its prestige overshadowing any new foundation. All had to be done from the beginning.

And the basis which formed the foundation of the structure was Sir Michael Sadler's masterly review of the position as it existed in Liverpool in 1904.

How wise and far reaching was that survey can be seen from the result that practically all the suggestions made there have been carried out, without alteration.

And it is to Mr. Alsop that the chief credit of the successful result belongs, supported as he was throughout by the Director of Education, Mr. Legge, whose loyal help was always forthcoming to carry the proposals into action.

The handing over, by a signal piece of generosity, of the Liverpool Institute and Blackburne House, to the Education Committee, and the purchase at a very moderate figure of the fine buildings of the Liverpool College in Shaw Street, where part of the old school was left behind on the removal of the College to the suburbs, to become the very successful Collegiate School, provided at once in the north and south of the more central portion of the city two schools which would be examples of what other and newer schools should aim at, in their development.

Mr. Alsop then proceeded to map out the outer portions of the city and to make provision for the extension of Secondary educational facilities near the homes of the dwellers in the rapidly growing suburbs. Two Girls' Schools—Queen Mary in the north, Aigburth Vale in the south—were the first fruits of this new expansion, while the Oulton and Holt Schools nearer the centre of the city offered opportunity for experiment in the value of co-education.

EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL xvii

In 1913 Mr. Alsop became Chairman of the Education Committee and had in due course to give up the Chairmanship of the Secondary Sub-Committee.

But his heart remained in this department, and no one knows better than I do, who had the privilege of taking his place as Chairman of the Secondary Sub-Committee, how carefully and closely he watched the continued development of Secondary Schools, even while the wide responsibilities of the whole Education work weighed heavily on his shoulders. Two more Girls' Schools, Holly Lodge and Calder, and two more Boys' Schools, Quarry Bank and the School which is to bear his own name, the Alsop, as a tribute of the appreciation of his fellow citizens, complete the original scheme to which he put his hand in 1904. As the city grows, further extensions will be necessary, but they will all be the outcome of the large vision and wide ideal of the first Chairman of the Secondary Schools Sub-Committee.

The satisfactory provision of these Schools gave an immense impetus to the demand for University Education of the best type. No longer need the University teach School subjects, and Mr. Alsop was thus enabled to push forward great schemes for the advancement of University teaching, unhampered.

No part of the University failed to obtain his sympathy.

Desirous as he was that the opportunities, which he in his own youth had to buy at a very great price of health and energy, should be available for all who had the talents to enable them to profit thereby, he placed no limits to the area of University Education. In the turning of University College into a full grown University he played a chief part. And from those days he was one of the most potent forces in the building up of Liverpool University, a University, as he was

xviii EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL

fond of stating, which was an essential part of a city's life and the crown of its Educational work.

His enthusiasm inspired others—the gifts from Liverpool citizens never failed—and perhaps one of the reasons was that everyone knew that his enthusiasm was no visionary vagueness, but was built on sure foundations, and that when he appealed for money it was with the full knowledge of a true educational need.

The nine years of his Presidency fell in difficult times. The war stopped the ordinary routine of University life. But Mr. Alsop at once recognised how valuable the Universities might be in the successful prosecution of the war, and rejoiced when our Liverpool University was able to contribute its full share towards the supplying of the brains necessary to wage a successful conflict in the XXth Century. And as soon as the war was over he handed on to his successor in the Presidential Chair an institution of which it could confidently be said that it was as ready to meet the needs of the new day as it had been, under his guidance, to play its part in the days that had gone. Liverpool University will indeed be ungrateful if it ever allows the name of James Alsop to lapse into oblivion.

I have spoken of his work for the University and for Secondary Education, but it must not be thought that it alone claimed his attention. No aspect of education failed to obtain his interest, and when he became Chairman of the Liverpool Education Committee, he surveyed the whole system with complete impartiality, and strove to keep an even balance with each department of the educational system. His ripe wisdom and thoughtful advice were always at the disposal of every worker in the educational field, and he looked forward to a time when sufficient funds would be forthcoming to enable the complete

EDUCATIONAL WORK IN LIVERPOOL xix

structure to be built (a time still, alas, on the far horizon), in which the talents of every boy and girl would find their proper home for development.

Should that day ever arrive, Liverpool will gratefully record the pioneer work so ably performed in an earlier time, when Mr. Alsop helped to lay the foundations of an enduring educational system.

JAMES W. ALSOP—A MEMOIR

THE MAN AND HIS WORK

CHAPTER I

1846—1876

IN our great City of Liverpool, so loved and so greatly served by many devoted citizens, it is difficult to pick out from this great throng any individual life, so wrapped together are the great workers, so eager are they to serve their City, so content are they to work hand in hand for the good of all.

It was the great joy and privilege of my dear husband to be one of this throng.

When he was a boy, he watched the life of the City and its great citizens at work, and he was eager to be able to serve it too, and in the many hardships of his early life, he had the needs of educational help forced upon him by the struggle he himself had to make in order to gain the wide education he longed to possess.

It was through the difficulties which he himself encountered, that the determination came to try and make the gate to learning easier and wider and more hospitable for those who came after, and who, like himself, had not the means to seek learning in the ancient Universities of Oxford and Cambridge.

He was not a son of Liverpool but was born in Birmingham in 1846. At the time of his birth, his father was a Congregational Minister at the new

Highbury Chapel, Graham Street, Birmingham, which had been built for the young minister and into which he and his congregation had moved the previous year.

There was much rejoicing when the minister's little son was born, and his mother often spoke of the many pretty gifts which came for the child, especially of a little scarlet coat, which, with his dark hair and eyes, suited her little son admirably.

These were days of happiness and sympathy with their people, and for several years all went well, but this did not last.

The young minister, a vigorous, honest and straightforward character, with a strong will and growing ideas of his own, began to have doubts as to some of the tenets of the Congregational faith which he was expected to uphold by the sterner members of the church, and he would not and could not conform to all they asked of him. His doubts increased as time went on, and in a few years he insisted on leaving the Highbury church in spite of protests from many members of his congregation and the comfortable prospects of his life there.

He accepted a call to a smaller church in Thornbury, Gloucestershire, where he hoped to have more freedom. This, however, he did not find, and before long he moved on to a church in the quaint old town of Hungerford, Berkshire, where he remained for the last two years of his Congregational ministry. There was much that endeared them here to the place and to the people, but he could not stay; he felt more and more that the Congregational ministry was not for him and that the only honest thing to do was to give it up, and they left Hungerford and went for a short time to relatives in Bristol.

The Alsop family for generations had been Bristol potters, and some of them had been closely connected with Richard Champion, the celebrated potter, to

whom one Jacob Alsop had been apprenticed as a china painter in 1777, and about the same date, another James Alsop, great-uncle of the Rev. James Alsop, is spoken of in books on Bristol pottery as a manufacturer of the Bristol stoneware. It was from these relatives that James W. Alsop used, in later years, to say with a smile that he had derived his love for old china.

His mother was a native of Birmingham, daughter of William Willcox, who had flour and malt mills in the city, and was a man of some standing, well-educated, well-to-do, a nonconformist, and with strong ideas of public service, who gave time to serve his city. He was Headborough of the Parish of Aston, Birmingham, in 1837, and had much exciting and responsible work to do, during the rioting and very disturbed times, on the passing of the Reform Bill in that year. This William Willcox, James's grandfather, had ten children, and Mary, who married the Rev. James Alsop was his youngest daughter; but her father died before she was married, and not many years later, after the death of her mother, all the brothers and sisters, with the exception of Mary and her brother Tom, emigrated to New Zealand and became some of the early and successful colonists there. Except one brother, none of them ever returned to their native land or saw those left in England again.

During all his father's changes from one church to another, the little son, James, grew and flourished, and up to the age of seven was taught nothing systematically; but being in the country, was out playing in the fields all day, his parents seeing plainly enough that he was developing only too fast as it was.

The temporary sojourn in Bristol was a time of grave anxiety for his parents. The young minister was left without the means of earning a living for his family, for he had by this time given up any idea of returning to the Congregational ministry. His wife

was not without money of her own, and they must have lived on this and on their savings during this period of uncertainty. Then, like so many others, at that time, the call to America took hold of them and they determined to emigrate to that land of promise and start afresh in some new field there. Every arrangement was made for them to go, and they came with their children to Liverpool in order to make ready for their departure.

It was an era of enterprise and change ; it was a time of strong religious convictions and of vigorous nonconformity. Liverpool was a stronghold of the Unitarian faith. It had two large and vigorous churches besides its Ancient Chapel at Toxteth, and its congregations numbered amongst their members many of the most cultivated and also the most influential, and certainly some of the richest families in the city. The Rev. J. H. Thom was at that time at the height of his great spiritual influence and was singularly beloved by his large and devoted congregation. To his church and under the spell of his influence came James's father in his great restlessness of spirit and with his doubts and difficulties, and America was forgotten in a sudden overwhelming certainty that here was the faith he could preach and the ministry he could take up heart and soul.

Their means must have been very small, but they took a tiny house on ground now covered by some of the Chemical buildings of the University, and it was on this spot that James, just seven years old, took firm root in the very heart of the city, like a seed blown almost by chance on the wind.

It was remarkable how at once he began to work. He was sent to the Hope Street British Schools, where at that time the teaching was excellent, and during the four years he was there he made very rapid progress,

and filled his parents and teachers with the highest hopes for his future.

He was a determined and hot-tempered child, but even in those days was learning to control his temper, and his strong sense of duty was already present, with a fearlessness and decision of purpose which remained always with him.

His father settled down to prepare himself for the Unitarian ministry, and took on various work in connection with it, but was never able to undertake a church of his own. Not very long after reaching Liverpool, his sight began to fail, and he was obliged to refrain from using it.

James's mother was still in the twenties when they came to Liverpool, and in the first year or two their fourth child was born. It became a sad time of struggle and anxiety for them, and their money must have been fast ebbing away. They had high ideas for their children, and in a determination that they should be well educated whatever else happened, they decided to take a stationer's and newspaper shop in Brownlow Hill, and start a lending library. For eight years, this brave little shop was kept going, and was the means of educating the boys and also of laying by means for the coming days, but it was hard work for the young mother. She had been used to a home of some luxury in her youth, but her boys' future was more to her than comfort, and she was determined to have them well educated.

During the first seven struggling years in Liverpool, the three youngest children died, two of them from scarlet fever, and this sorrow had such a disastrous effect on their father, that he became ill, and his eyesight, so weak before, grew rapidly worse and total blindness seemed likely to result.

After four years at the Hope Street Schools, James was sent to the Liverpool Institute, at first to the

Lower School. Here he took a good place at once, and in 1860 he passed the Oxford Local Examination for Juniors in the 1st Division, taking Second place in the whole Kingdom, and gaining a Prize of £3. This was the first money of any amount he had possessed, and in a small notebook kept by him at the time is this entry : ' I mean to give £1 to Mamma and to spend another on the school books I so much need, and to save up the other.' In the same notebook he expresses the hope that the success in the examination will give him an Exhibition to the Higher School, and in the following year, 1861, we find him there and in the 6th Form, and already going in for the *Senior Oxford* Local Examination, which he passed First Class in English History, Shakespeare, Addison, Political Economy and Law, Physical Geography, Mathematics and Mechanics ; and having taken the *first* place among seniors of the Liverpool district, and having passed the voluntary examination in the rudiments of faith and religion, he received the Earl of Derby's Prize of £10. This was in 1861, when he was fourteen, and before the end of the year he went in for the *Senior Cambridge* Local Examination, and took a *first class in Honours*, and was distinguished in English, French and Chemistry, and, being the only candidate in the Country who obtained distinction in Chemistry, the local Committee awarded him a Prize of £3.

From the time he reached the High School, certainly his education must have cost his parents nothing ; he paid for his books and his examinations out of his prizes, and held an Exhibition in the Upper School. He had, indeed, a long list of successes.

Pressed forward at home and at school, and eager himself, he worked almost unceasingly, and as his father's sight grew worse and darkness began to close around him, he leant more and more on his son, whose

young life became one of great struggle and continuous anxiety and work.

When James was 14, he was taken from school for a fortnight to manage the library and the shop, while his father and mother went to Germany to consult an oculist as a last hope of saving his father's sight. The shop got on well under the young shopman, who remained always proud of this achievement. His mother returned in a fortnight anxious about her boys and her home, leaving her husband behind under the doctor's special care, but the German treatment proved in the end quite unsuccessful and absolute blindness followed. In this stricken condition, he arrived home unexpectedly one evening, having travelled from Germany blind and alone all the way.

The honours of his son in these dark years were at least a bright spot to the blind father, but for the boy himself it was a struggling time, a time of few pleasures, if any, and of a stern routine of hard work, and as his father and teachers pressed him forward, they found only too willing a scholar ready to welcome every help to fresh endeavour towards the wide education which, even in such early years, was a passionate ideal in his heart.

In appearance he had black hair and the darkest eyes, with thick marked eye-brows; these were like his father's, but there was something in the moulding of his face and the quiet steady gaze that was always reminiscent of his mother, and his reticence, his patience and his quiet strength of will, were like his mother too. There was one quality also which was as singular and marked in his very early years as it was all through his life, his high sense of duty.

During these school years, he was going over a wide field of study and working hard at everything, and at the same time seems to have been reading for himself every book of interest he could lay hands on.

In a little notebook of his own when he was 14 is this entry. 'I read a portion of a book on drawing by Ruskin to-day. This book is written in a very earnest manner and the style pleased me very much. The author teaches drawing by a very novel and pleasing system.'

About this time he was taking an intense interest in the American War between the northern and southern states, and in his notebooks are constant references to meetings for the abolition of slavery, to which he had gone with his father. Amongst some of his boyish treasures found lately, are large numbers of newspaper cuttings relating to this war, arranged in packets with wonderful care and precision, and very carefully marked with dates, etc., and in the same box of treasures an original English edition of 'Uncle Tom's Cabin,' which looks as if it had been read and re-read in those days of interest and enthusiasm; possibly it was a book in their lending library, and that this accounts for its extremely worn appearance.

In these early days, there were no organised sports in the Liverpool Institute, but there came a time when military drill was started in the school for the 1st and 2nd class scholars and a uniform was adopted for the boys to wear. James's father was entirely against this innovation and sternly objected to it, and James, to his great distress, was never allowed to join in the drill or to wear a uniform. It was a very painful exception for him to endure, but his father was a strict disciplinarian, and though devoted to his boys, they had to do his bidding and he was often a severe taskmaster.

On gaining his Exhibition for the Upper School, James was at once put into the 6th Form and in his notebook in mentioning the fact says: 'all the boys are in uniform except myself.'

In October 1860, the Free Library and the Museum were presented to the town by William Brown. This created much excitement. The chief schools in the town were closed, and the boys at the Institute who had uniforms walked in the procession which accompanied Mr. Brown to open the buildings. James, however, was not able to go, as he was not allowed by his father to have a uniform, but he was nevertheless very keenly interested in watching the other boys in his class start, and was greatly interested in the opening, and in the gift of the new building. He wrote in his diary: 'It is a grand day for Liverpool,' and already, though only 14, he was keenly interested for the good of the City.

During these strenuous schooldays, James and his brother Henry made the most of any pleasures that came their way, sliding and skating in winter, and taking long walks with their school friends and going to lectures and concerts at the school and at the church. Occasionally, in their holidays, they went on a visit to a favourite uncle and aunt who had a farm in Yorkshire, and all that went on in the farm was of keen interest to the boys, and they made hay and chopped wood, and gathered in fruit and were very happy, their aunt making all kinds of good things for them while they were there. They kept elaborate notes of the distances they walked each day, and the places they visited and the people they met. Once in chopping wood, James chopped his foot instead, and nearly lost a toe. His aunt put him into bed and tied up his foot in salt, the agony of which kept him there for the day, but in the morning he escaped and hobbled a mile to the village library to fetch a book and hobbled back again, but was unable afterwards to leave his bed for some time to come. They always returned to Liverpool laden with treasures for a museum which they had in their room at home, and with butter and eggs from the farm.

Sundays were full days in James's youth. During all his schooldays he attended two Sunday School Classes each Sunday and often two services as well, but occasionally, on fine Sunday evenings, the boys were allowed to go off on a long walk in the country, which was not far away in those days from their home, and sometimes one of the boys had to accompany his father to some distant church where, in spite of his blindness, he conducted the services for the day.

Their mother was very musical, and she sang well and had been taught by the best masters, and in her busy life whenever it was possible to do so, she had music with her boys in the evening and encouraged their musical friends to join them, and they had many happy evenings with games and music. Both boys took music lessons on Saturday afternoons, and both inherited their mother's great love of music. Henry who was a very merry boy, three years younger than James, was never a student, but was passionately fond of music and drawing and reached some proficiency in both, and James often sang to Henry's accompaniment and with their friends they had glees and part singing, and went through a great variety of music. Though James was never much of a musician, his knowledge of music was wide and his delight in it far deeper than most people ever guessed. During his many travels abroad in later years, he seldom missed an opportunity of hearing good music, wherever it was to be found, and it was an endless joy and refreshment to him. His was a mind always drawn towards beautiful things, and where he found music or great pictures, fine old buildings or great books, and above all mountains and fine open country, there he was at home and happy and always learning.

As the time drew near for him to leave school, and it was fixed he must do this when he was fifteen, he became very anxious as to his future prospects. He had

set his whole heart on going to Oxford or Cambridge, and his thoughts became fixed on a University career ; he was ambitious to try his powers further, and for the wider culture, the wider intercourse and the wider knowledge that a University life would bring, and to have more freedom and more independence than he had in Liverpool. He had seen so little, and he longed desperately to go out and see more. But as the time drew near, he knew more and more that this great hope was closed to him. There were no scholarships that he could win in those days, that would take him either to Oxford or Cambridge, and there was no local University to be entered ; and the bitter disappointment of it all sank very deeply into his soul, for there seemed no help anywhere, only barriers facing him at every turn.

Things were indeed hard enough at home, and his brother Henry must now start at the Institute on *his* school career and this must be paid for, for he was not likely to win scholarships or prizes as James had done. His father's sight was gone and his mother far from strong, and though the shop was successful, for her the struggle was very great, and the youngest child Alfred died during James's last year at school, bringing fresh sadness into the home.

On December 12th, 1861, there is this note in his diary : ' At dinner-time to-day, Papa and I went into town to the office of Thomas Avison, Esq., Attorney and Notary, 18, Cook Street. This was for the purpose of arranging with Mr. Avison as to my coming into his office as a clerk. It was finally settled that I am to go on probation for some time, 3 or 6 months, and if I like the law and Mr. Avison likes me, I shall probably be assisted towards reaching the profession. I am to go first on January 1st, 1862. I shall have easy hours, 9.15 to 6, with an hour-and-a-half for dinner, so that I hope to continue my studies of the languages.'

Two days later comes the entry : ' Dec., 14th, 1861. To-day I attended our school for the last time and so said good-bye to some of the masters.' It was two days later than this that James went in for his Senior Cambridge Local Examination ; it lasted six days and he passed with first class Honours and with distinction in Chemistry, and won a local prize. The Christmas was a very quiet one ; his baby brother had lately died, and there was ' no romping or noise ' as James has it in his diary, but they had goose and plum pudding on Christmas Day, and afterwards he was presented by his parents with a beautiful desk with lock and key. His school days were over ; he was fifteen, and this desk was a special recognition of the fact and of their satisfaction over the hard work he had done and the many successes he had won.

In his notebooks, James says little about his school days, but he told many stories about them and of the pranks the boys played on the masters and on each other, and James who was a good deal repressed at home took a good part in these escapades and greatly enjoyed them.

During these Christmas holidays he met Dr. Martineau who came on a visit to Liverpool, and James greatly admired him, and in the years that followed he never missed going to hear Dr. Martineau whenever he had the chance of doing so, and spoke of him warmly to the end of his life.

On Jan. 1st, 1862, James entered Mr. Avison's office, and began his training for the law, setting himself with his accustomed vigour to the new work ; but for all that, his mind was still set on a University Degree : *that* he was determined to have somehow, even though Oxford and Cambridge *were* closed to him. There was still London University, and for that the work might be done in Liverpool if only the guidance and help could be obtained.

In the evenings after his work at the office was done, he began to attend classes at Queen's College, Liverpool, which undertook to prepare students for the London degree; and as the London University did not make residence there compulsory, and indeed then was no more than a great examining body for a degree (a very stiff one), he set about in this way to prepare himself for taking it.

In 1863, he matriculated at the London University in the First Class, and in 1865, passed his first B.A., gaining the *First Place* in the special examination for Honours in English Language and Literature, in consequence whereof an Exhibition of the value of £30 a year tenable for two years was awarded to him. As residence at college was not one of the conditions of holding it, he was enabled to enjoy the fruits of his success while pursuing his professional studies at Law and discharging his duties as Articled Clerk.

In 1867, at the age of 21, he passed his full B.A. of London University with First Class Honours in Logic and in Mental and Moral Philosophy, and two years later than this, in 1869, he passed the Final Law Examination of the Law Society with Honours, and was admitted a Solicitor, gaining the Timpron Martin and Atkinson Medals for the best Liverpool law student of the year.

In that last year's work, his health began to fail. There were constant times when he could not sleep, and in his notebooks are allusions to walking for miles late at night hoping to tire himself into sleep, and sudden flights from home on short walking tours with old school friends, hoping to benefit through a change. Sometimes on returning he seemed better, and he started his studies again with fresh vigour, but it was a case of falling back oftener and oftener into a state of sleeplessness.

About this time he was elected a Life Member of

his old school, the Liverpool Institute. He was interested in everything that went on round the school, and kept up with a variety of old boys' societies, not only belonging to them, but taking an active and leading part in each, and was always proud and eager for the honour of his old school. At the church too, which he attended, he was librarian and teacher in the Sunday School, and took an active part in the numerous activities round the church, and became prime mover in starting a choral union, and became secretary and treasurer for it.

After being admitted a solicitor in 1869, he entered the office of Richardson & Billson as managing clerk, and remained two years in this office, and during that time made many lifelong friendships. He learned to know Mr. Billson and his family intimately, also Mr. Richardson, and was constantly at their houses enjoying all kinds of literary and social life with them. It was in Mr. Billson's office that he first met his beloved and lifelong friend, Mr. Augustine Birrell. They were in the office together and saw much of one another, and became close and very intimate friends sharing many interests in common. One of James's most treasured and delightful memories was of that early friendship and the many walking tours they had together in Scotland and abroad in those days of high spirits and high hopes, with all life in front of them. In the years that followed, when Mr. Birrell came to Liverpool, and when James went to London, they almost always managed to spend some time together, and after the fog and strain, Mr. Birrell's spirits and humour, his love of literature and of human life and his affectionate open-hearted friendship, fell upon James with an intoxicating delight and pleasure.

In 1871, Mr. Enoch Harvey offered James a partnership. He was then 25 years of age, and had had two years' experience as managing clerk. He gladly

accepted the offer, and the firm became 'Harvey & Alsop.' In that same year, James was elected a member of the Incorporated Law Society of Liverpool.

During the years that followed, he devoted himself with great earnestness to his business which grew accordingly, but all the time he did not give up his studies, and was constantly making plans for new and stiff courses of reading, in spite of continued attacks of sleeplessness. His enthusiasm for learning was so great that it seemed to blind him at this time to the collapse in health which was steadily and surely approaching, though at the same time he evidently felt keenly his over-strained condition.

On returning from a first holiday in Switzerland in 1873, he wrote in his diary: 'After being for 2½ years more or less weak and out of health, and having had great anxiety for the greater part of that time, owing to certain symptoms which threatened to render necessary a complete change in my mode and objects of life, I at length feel myself relieved and I believe restored to a bodily and mental condition I hardly hoped to reach again. After the Swiss tour, I seem quite to have regained my physical strength, and a revived interest in intellectual work proves that I am again fit to engage in it. Evidently a rest was needed after the almost continuous spell of reading which began two years before I left school and continued until I had taken my Degree. But *now* every motive which used to impel me to devote a great part of my leisure to study seems to act more strongly than ever. I see my educational deficiencies more and more, till it seems unendurable that I should not do all that is still possible to remove them. And at 27 years of age, I cannot close my eyes to the fact that after a very few more years the practical work for which study pure and simple is chiefly intended to prepare one will

leave little leisure for personal cultivation. I shall attempt to carry out the following plan :

‘I propose to take up again the course for the first LL.B. examination, London, which I once before commenced. If I can get up the subjects sufficiently to carry me through the exam. I shall be very glad, but this is of comparatively little importance. My object is to learn the outlines of Jurisprudence, Roman Law and Constitutional History, and for this I have always thought the London course an excellent one. I propose rapidly to go through the first volume of Austin again, then read Main’s Ancient Law and then take Austin again and some of the Roman Law.

‘I also feel that I *must* read English Law for Professional purposes and I therefore propose always to have some Textbook or leading Case Book on hand. I have thought of Arnould on Marine Insurance or Benjamin on Sales to commence with.

‘I propose to work at languages one at a time, giving most time for the present to German, in which I am most deficient.

‘I also wish to read one work at a time of general literature, such as History, Botany, Travels, allowing myself considerable latitude of choice.

‘The above with an occasional novel will take up all the time I can devote to reading and at first at any rate I shall have to carry out my plan with many interruptions.

‘It is quite impossible for me to devote so much time or energy to study as I used to do ; a difficult and responsible occupation involving constant head work and anxiety, takes away the best mental fruits and leaves only a tired mind for the evening’s reading. I shall have to cut my coat accoring to my cloth ; all I can do is to try and cut as large a one as possible.’

A few days later in the same diary he writes :
‘Liverpool has become much more enterprising in

the matter of lectures than it used to be. This winter there will be at least three good courses besides odd lectures, the Law lectures, a course of Science lectures by eminent men and Professor Morley's course on English Literature from 1789 to 1824. To-day I began to attend Bryce's Lectures on Jurisprudence. Bryce is apparently about 30 years of age, he speaks with little assistance from notes in a clear, simple and forcible way and is evidently well acquainted with his subject. He seemed to follow Austin very much both in matter and arrangement but occasionally differs in matter of detail.

'Morley is an older man with less simplicity of style, but considerable powers of expression and a wonderful knowledge of English Literature.'

The diary continues :

'Oct. 21st, 1873. Began Maine's Ancient Law.

'Oct. 24, 1873. Began Mill's Autobiography (just published).

'Oct. 25th. *Light.*

'The night has a thousand eyes

'And the day but one,

'Yet the light of a whole world dies

'With the setting sun.

'The mind has a thousand eyes

'And the heart but one

'Yet the light of a whole life dies

'When love is done.

F. W. Bourdillon.

From *The Spectator*.'

The latter comes like a ray of warmth amidst this rush of learning. It was from the 'Spectator' too, and *this* had come into his life and was to stay as his weekly companion to the last. The diary breaks off here after two more notes and was not continued.

During these last years of business and study, James was at the same time widening his circle of friends

and enjoying much social intercourse. He became very intimate with the Harvey family and there are many letters both from Mr. and Mrs. Harvey and Mrs. Campbell, Mr. Harvey's sister, showing with what kindly friendship and with what confidence they regarded him and how many artistic, literary, and social interests they shared in common. James was often at their house and spent week-ends with them and was constantly meeting interesting people.

At the house of Dr. Alexander, James met about this time his lifelong friends, Dr. Caton and Mr. John MacKelvie, and with the latter went several walking tours in Wales which laid the foundation of a very close and intimate friendship later. Mr. MacKelvie writes : ' James was at this time living with his parents and brother in Kinglake Street, Liverpool, and I remember meeting Mr. Birrell there for the first time and Mr. Birrell handing me James's Sophocles and saying, " whom business could not make dull nor passion wild," and I remember how Mr. Birrell at a later time spent an Easter holiday at my house, and how he and James played croquet with me on Easter Monday and read Emerson and other authors in the evening.'

Mr. MacKelvie lived on the Birkenhead side, and his house was a very pleasant one to visit and was a rendezvous for many friends.

Through Mr. Harvey, James became intimate with Mrs. Charles Holland and her large family, and the young men became great friends. They met over business and at the Club and presently took many pleasures together. Both James and John MacKelvie were invited to their home, a charming house in a large and lovely garden shaded by tall trees on the banks of the Mersey at New Brighton. In the spring, snowdrops, crocuses, and daffodils made the ground golden and white beneath the trees, and round about the verandah across the front of the house hung lovely

creepers and French windows opened onto it. The river Mersey flowed beside the garden, and on summer evenings James and the young Hollands went canoeing on the water.

For James, who had lived so much in town, it had an alluring charm and the whole family seemed to him even more delightful than the house they lived in. They were a large family of young people, and to James Mrs. Holland always remained the ideal hostess, charming in manner, full of kindness and dignity, intellectually alive to all that was going on in the world about her, very fond of literature, of music, and of art, and encouraging these tastes in all who came to her home, and with a heart of understanding and sympathy for the young. No wonder that he fell in love with them all, and that the happy warmth of those early years of friendship tinged all his life and that the memory of it never faded. He kept in touch with them all to the last and I know they always felt for him the warmest friendship. He and Edgar Holland for years met almost daily and remained to the last the closest friends. They went away on many holidays together, and after we were married, there were not many holidays when Edgar did not join us for part of the time. He would turn up in all sorts of out of the way places and quietly go along with us, and James always left the dates and addresses with him before we started. Generally when we had ceased to expect him and were beginning to turn our thoughts homeward, we would come across him waiting for us on the mountain side as we returned from a climb, or perhaps he would be sitting on the bench at the inn door when we arrived.

In 1874, after James had been suffering even more than usual from hay fever which attacked him every summer with great virulence, he determined to take a sea voyage and decided to go to America, and John MacKelvie and Edgar Holland joined him.

James was at this time a member of the Board of Directors of his old school, the Liverpool Institute, and he was becoming more and more interested in educational questions, and on this tour in America they spent a very great deal of time visiting Universities, Colleges, and Schools of all kinds. They came armed with introductions, many of them from Mrs. Holland, and received everywhere a very hospitable American reception and were shown a great deal. At Harvard University, President Eliot put his time at their disposal and showed them round the University, afterwards entertaining them to luncheon, and, Mr. MacKelvie tells me, asked if they would like to see any of their famous men ? James expressed a desire to meet Lowell but unfortunately he was out of town. They also visited Vassar College, Cornell University, and the Normal School for Girls, of which James wrote : ' a splendid education is given at the expense of the city to 1,200 girls selected on the grounds of proficiency from the elementary schools.' So they wandered on and spent some time in the Catskill Mountains and on the lakes Champlain and Lake George, and on the way to Montreal visited Niagara, and here Mr. MacKelvie in describing the tour says : ' there is nothing much to say about Niagara except ordinary tourists' impressions, but curiously enough the only time I ever saw Alsop lose his nerve (always so steadily strong), was when he shrank back from descending to the cave of the winds, and I had to go down alone with the professional guide. It is a trying ordeal anyhow, and one requires to be in very good condition to withstand the stifling spray and deafening roar of the fall at its base.'

This was only a few months before James had a terrible breakdown in health and eyesight ; this Mr. MacKelvie had no idea of at the time, but I have no doubt that James himself realised his unfitness and with his wise judgment stayed behind. He was always

capable of the most rapid decisions but generally startled you by his fearlessness.

Towards the end of October they were back in Liverpool, and James was again hard at work, but by the New Year he was in the gravest anxiety about his health, which entirely broke down. Acute dyspepsia set in and he could neither eat nor sleep with comfort, and what was most distressing was that the sight of one eye seemed gone.

In this alarming condition at the beginning of 1875, he consulted Mr. Harvey, telling him everything, but asking him to keep complete silence about his loss of sight, as his father and mother were at that time in great anxiety about his brother Henry, and he wished whatever happened that they should be saved the pain and anxiety of knowing that his own sight was failing.

Mr. Harvey was the kindest friend to him; he persuaded him to go to London at once and consult Sir Andrew Clark and take his advice as to the best oculist to go to.

Both doctors advised a year's complete and absolute rest, and a change to an open air life as quickly as possible. They gave not the slightest hope of the sight ever returning to the one eye, but were very encouraging about the other, and advised that with care and rest this one would be saved and that with an open air life the dyspepsia also would in all probability pass away.

It was, however, a serious outlook for him. Scarcely more than three years had passed since he joined Mr. Harvey, and Mr. Harvey had no other partner and had grown very dependent on him. Mr. Harvey, however, was full of kindness and at once recognised the fact that James must have the change and rest at once and for a whole year. They finally arranged for their chief clerk, Mr. Stevens, to be taken into partnership, and in February, James left Liverpool by steamer

for Malta. His plan was to go by Malta to Sicily and Italy for the spring months, and when the summer came to move on to Switzerland, and the high Alps.

At Malta he stayed a week exploring with a friend the country round and in the evening went to the opera. Afterwards a night journey by steamer took them to Syracuse, where they arrived in time to see the glories of the sunrise over Syracuse harbour. So they steamed along the coast visiting one lovely spot after another and settled down at Taormina, an old Greek colony founded 2,500 years ago, the town perched on a rock above the blue Mediterranean, with Mount Etna on the right towering up to a height of nearly 11,000 feet and almost covered with snow. In a letter, however, he says : ' I feel no advantage from the change yet, except that I am free from the pressure of business and sleep better.' He was, however, so pleased with Taormina, that he stayed until March 12th enjoying the advancing springtime in the lovely country round and delighting in the almond trees and the butterflies and lizards.

On leaving he went by train to Messina, and then by steamer to Naples, where he anxiously awaited the first letters from home.

Unfortunately they brought him the very startling news of his brother's death. It was a terrible shock to him. At first he thought he must return to his parents in their overwhelming sorrow, but they wrote so earnestly begging him not to do so, but to stay where he was and do all he possibly could to get better, that he made up his mind to remain, but the shock and sorrow set back his recovery and he went through a time of great weakness and suffering after first reaching Naples.

In a short time his Malta friend rejoined him and other friends turned up and he did all he could to enter

into the life of the place and its surroundings. He and his friend took riding lessons at the riding school and went there most days, enjoying it greatly. After a few lessons they rode out into the country and on to the hills, and on one occasion, after hiring some horses at a wayside inn, they were both thrown, as unknown to them these horses had a trick of stopping dead in the middle of a gallop.

Naples grew in interest for James as he stayed there, and he made delightful friends. His health too improved and the climate suited him. It was in Naples that he picked up many of his old Italian songs, 'La Bella Sorrentina,' 'Funiculi Funicula,' 'La Palamella,' 'L'addio a Napoli,' and 'Mariani,' all of which the girls and boatmen sang on the quay, and which were great favourites with him. He often sang these songs himself in after years. The soft Italian accent and the sweet melodies seemed always to suit his mellow voice. His familiarity with Italian opera too came through this long sojourn in Italy, during which he went constantly to the Opera House and heard the same operas again and again.

It is amazing to find from his diary, with what energy he explored the country round, going far inland, generally on horseback, into the recesses of the hills and through out-of-the-way mountain villages, visiting many unknown and interesting places and seeing a very great deal of the peasant life of the Italians. He made many expeditions with his friends, going to Pompeii and Herculaneum, ascending Vesuvius and cooking eggs in a hole near the top and taking a good look into the crater. Amalfi and Paestum he visited again and again, and spent two days on the Island of Ischia making two riding tours round the island on an Ischian pony. He also joined friends on an excursion to Capri in a boat with four rowers, having a rough time going against a head wind, but

returning to Sorrento in half the time, the sails set all the way.

So April passed and before it was over he reached Florence by way of Leghorn and Pisa.

It was not to be a long visit, however, hardly a fortnight ; the weather was hot and he became much less well again, but Florence made a deep impression on him.

He quickly left the hotel and went to a pension, where he made friends with interesting people who knew Florence well, and he entered quickly into the heart of the place, enjoying it from many points of view.

It was here that his interest was awakened in the early schools of Italian painting and architecture, and with the books of Ruskin, Hare, and Mrs. Jameson to help him, he entered this wonder-world with growing enthusiasm.

The life of the place too greatly interested him, also the daily services at the churches and those on special Saints Days and Festivals.

The history of the ancient city he knew well and everything spoke to him and was full of meaning, and his love of Florence grew as he learnt to know her secrets. His diary gives a wonderful idea of how he packed his time and how his interests in many directions widened.

He delighted in the customs of the city and he gives an amusing account of how, on Ascension Day, he was out very early breakfasting with the Florentine crowd in the public pleasure grounds on the Arno, where they baked bread and cakes on the spot, and how he, with all the rest, bought a grillo (a kind of cricket) in a small cage, the customary belief being that if you put it outside your bedroom window on Ascension night and hear it sing, good fortune will attend you through the year, but otherwise *not*. In a later note in the diary he says : ‘ my grillo sang a little

early in the night but by the morning it had disappeared.'

On May 11th, he left Florence, and calling at Milan for a day or two, quickly pressed forward to reach higher ground. On the evening of the 14th, he wound his way up on a mule to the hotel on Monte Generosa, a mountain on the east side of Lake Lugano, with exquisite views of lakes and snow mountains, the music of cowbells already in the air.

It was full spring and all the mountain sides gay with flowers, the loveliest Alpine varieties, which in May were found in profusion on these higher Italian slopes. He mentions in his diary a whole crowd of lovely kinds, and butterflies, too, and a green spider.

When he arrived at the hotel he was the first visitor, but others soon came up, and before he left there were thirty and a very friendly and interesting company. On leaving Monte Generosa he crossed the St. Gothard Pass, making a long round afterwards through the higher valleys of the Oberland until he eventually reached Murren in early June, being again the first visitor; but in a day or two a delightful little company assembled there, amongst them several botanists with whom James made excursions and greatly increased his knowledge of the Alpine plants. For a month he wandered about in the keen sunny air and began steadily to grow stronger.

With a lively party of friends he left Murren towards the middle of July, and after a gay and musical evening at Lauterbrunnen walked with them next day to the top of the Little Scheideck and there stayed on alone, the rest of the party moving down to Grindelwald.

Up in this bracing air he was better and made several small ascents, climbing up to the hut on the Monch Buttress and crossing the Eiger Glacier and the rocks. Afterwards by a long series of walks and climbs over passes and glaciers he reached Pontresina at the end

of July, and was warmly welcomed at Hotel Roseg where he had been so happy two years before.

Here for two months he spent a long delightful time, in the midst of friends and always adding to them, and his health improving gradually and steadily at last. He met that summer many who were to be lifelong friends, and grew to love the place better every day he stayed there.

On Piz Languard soon after he arrived, he met Mr. Cozens Hardy and Mr. and Mrs. Jesse Collings, Miss Collings, and Mr. Parman, and the many excursions they took then together over the glaciers and snow-fields and up the different valleys in search of flowers, were repeated again in years to come, when we met Mr. and Mrs. Jesse Collings there after our marriage, again and again, and the old days were recalled as we visited once more the old places.

As James grew stronger on that early visit, he was out every day on some fairly big excursion, and parties were made up most days for all kinds of different climbs and walks and drives. He was constantly on the glaciers, and loved the snow and ice, and the Diavalezza round was repeated again and again with different parties of friends.

It was a gay and festive life and full of interest. Glorious scenery and keenest mountain air, a host of delightful friends and happy doings, fun and talk and adventure and the making of friendships, and excursions by day and dancing and games at night. He entered into it all and was ready and eager to take part. There was only one thing which he claimed always as his right, especially in later years when he reached the Engadine tired, and that was, to be allowed to do nothing but lie on the mountain side for the first week, and if anyone who loved it would read poetry to him, he liked that. When the week was over he rose like a giant refreshed, and was ready to

climb anything and full of plans for doing so, and loitering was not to be thought of any more.

So the summer passed into autumn on this year of holiday finding him the last visitor in the hotel. On Sept. 24th, he joined Edgar Holland and went to Munich and afterwards through the romantic lake district of the Salz Kammergut on to Ischl and Salzburg; everywhere hearing great music. At Munich he met his new partner, Mr. Stevens. When again left alone, he turned eastward, and taking the steamer at Linz on the Danube went on to Vienna, and there he settled down for some time. Vienna fascinated him greatly, its beautiful buildings, its churches, its gay crowds and beautiful parks and music, its Opera, Theatre and Concerts, and its wonderful Art treasures; it was long before he tore himself away, wandering afterwards through Styria to Trieste and on to Venice. Here he picked up his main luggage and dispatched a box and his ice axe to England. Then for a few delightful days he wandered in gondolas about the silent, beautiful city, studying its architecture and taking in its beauty and visiting its buildings, churches and palaces, listening to the church music, and here, too, going to the Theatre. After a few days in Bologna, and again a few days in Florence, Nov. 13th found him in Rome.

This was his first visit to Rome. He arrived after 6 o'clock, after dark and in November; but that same evening he strolled along the Forum with two friends and saw the Colosseum, lighted up by a full moon. This was a fine introduction to the Eternal City. A few days later he wrote to his father: 'Rome is the most interesting place I have ever seen; almost every stone and wall and fountain has some history, either being connected with some incident in the history of the Republic or with some Emperor or some Saint or some Pope,' and again in the same letter he

says: 'On Tuesday, I visited the old Church of St. John Lateran, the old seat of the Popes before St. Peter's was built, and in the afternoon took a ride out onto the Campagna and had a capital gallop. I am still a poor rider, but manage to keep my seat and hope to improve with practice.' His interests were many and varied, and he had not been long in Rome before he had an audience of the Pope (Pius IX), and a few days later called upon Garibaldi, who received him into the bosom of his family, his wife and beautiful children being with him. Garibaldi warmly greeted and welcomed him as an English friend, asking for news of many who had been good to him in England, especially in Liverpool, and sending back messages to them. Garibaldi was in his scarlet shirt and wrapped round with blankets as he was suffering greatly from rheumatism at the time.

Whilst busy and interested in all these different experiences, James not only found time to take an Italian lesson most days, but when church festivals came round he was sure to be in the special church dedicated to the Saint of that day, listening to the church music and immensely interested in the whole service. It was amazing how he knew when and where all these things were going to happen, and the music that could be heard in certain churches on certain days. The old Italian paintings were lighted up for him with interest and meaning, because he knew the signs and legends of the Saints and the doctrines and dogmas of the Church of Rome, and also because he knew the history and growth of painting itself.

When he went into these great churches and fine old buildings everything spoke to him; he knew the columns when he looked at them, the parts that showed you what they were, and so with the arches and the structure; he had sometime found them all out, and as he looked at them, he knew them and could

tell you, if you asked him, all about them. He was the most delightful of travelling companions, never pressing his knowledge on you but always encouraging your interest, and when you asked him, telling you so quietly all about things. I think it often was with others as it was with me. I often hardly realised all he had to give until the moment had passed by. He was so modest and so quiet, and I think he seldom realised himself that he knew more than most of us.

It was not until December 15th that he left Rome, and then he felt obliged to return homewards. His mother was far from well, and his father had grown very restless, and though he had kept in almost daily touch with them, all through this time abroad, and had shared in all their difficulties and sorrow, as far as he possibly could, through constant letters to them, still he had felt he must give them a promise to return for Christmas, and though his year was still two months from its completion and (though better) he was still by no means well, it seemed to him impossible to remain away from them any longer.

He had a cold journey home, and found heavy snow piled up in the streets of Munich and in other German cities he passed through, but everywhere there was some beautiful music, and at Wiesbaden he had some skating, and a symphony concert in the evening. The weather became stormy, he had a rough crossing to Dover, and the next morning in London slept till noon. Afterwards he went to see his friends, Mr. Birrell and Mr. Cozens Hardy, and later went to the evening service at St. Paul's.

The next morning he went to the service at Westminster Abbey, and then went to see other friends and visited the British Museum. In the evening he went to the Princess's Theatre and saw Rip van Winkle, with Jefferson as Rip. Did he, *too*, feel, I wonder, that he was returning to a new world like Rip? This was on

December 22nd; on the 23rd, after a morning's shopping, he left Euston for home, his father and mother meeting him at Edge Hill Station, with glad and thankful hearts, and so he was at home again, and his year of wandering ended.

Perhaps he was himself changed more than he knew, or rather perhaps his outlook was changed. This year of freedom had broken across his life and had snapped old tight moorings. He was never to go back to the old life again, not the life as he had left it.

The old home was different, his brother was gone, and his mother was woefully ill and shaken. James saw the old doctor who was such a devoted friend of the family, and he advised that she should leave Liverpool altogether, and suggested Birmingham, as being her native air, and also as likely to bring her in touch with old friends and relatives once more. It was, however, a difficult question to decide. Both father and mother clung to their son more than ever now they had him back, and neither of them could be brought to think of leaving him. For some time it was a question whether they should all remain together and take a house on the Birkenhead side of the river, or whether they should part and his parents go to Birmingham. In the end they agreed he should make a journey to Birmingham and see if he could find a suitable home for them. The plan was carried out, and on his return he brought word of a nice convenient house and good garden in Moseley, a pleasant and quiet suburb of Birmingham with trees and pretty gardens, and in 1876 they gave up the old home in Kinglake Street, and in the early autumn went to live in Birmingham.

James also made a change and took lodgings in Oxton. Many of his friends were living there, and the more bracing air and the river crossing attracted him; he had turned a page in his life and a long chapter had ended.

CHAPTER II

1876—1886

OXTON in those days was on the edge of a wide extent of open moorland and heather. New roads were creeping up the eastern slope of the hill across cornfields, and the houses appeared so rapidly that the name of Chicago was given to this colony as it seemed to spring up as suddenly as that mushroom city in the far West.

Where Bidston Road is planted now so firmly, as if it always had been so, there was in those days, all along the ridge, only a rough cart track, with two landmarks, the old Oxton Church at one end like a barn, and a tall, thin, white house at the other end where the clergyman lived, and somewhere about this time a grey stone house began to rise up in the middle between the clergyman and his church, but it was a year or two yet before Mr. Billson, in whose office James had been, crossed the cart track and planted 'Ulverscroft' out on the heather on the far side.

James took rooms on the eastern slope of the hill. He had nine landladies, who bore the name of 'Alsop' but were not related to him, but neither the number of his landladies nor their name frightened him away, he enjoyed the humour of it all, and took the rooms and settled down.

The rooms were large and airy, and he gradually substituted his own furniture for theirs and arranged his growing collection of books and old engravings and old china round the walls. There was a charm and refinement about the rooms as you entered them, and in the springtime on the low window sills were glasses

with exquisite hyacinths which he tended and grew himself. The wonder was the life which circled about these rooms and the number of people who came in and out, and found help and pleasure there. The busy rushing professional life he led in Liverpool, the public services he was gradually taking up, the social life which he now embraced gladly and which was so warmly extended to him both in Liverpool and Birkenhead, the number of societies he belonged to and took a leading part in, several Shakespeare Societies, a Ruskin Society, a Literary and Scientific Society, the Philomathic Debating Society and a number of Musical and Choral Societies. Dances, croquet, archery, and canoeing on the Mersey, he took part and an enthusiastic part in all, and shared a box at the great concerts in Liverpool with John MacKelvie, where they entertained their friends together. In all this busy life he was at the same time reading and working steadily and writing always twice a week to his parents, whom he went to see in Birmingham almost every fortnight. He planned his work so carefully that he got through a large amount in the time.

In many directions his circle of friends was widening rapidly, and he was full of invitations and threw himself into social life with immense enjoyment of it, but he never forgot the old friends, nor, as he made himself an honoured position in Liverpool, did he ever lose touch with or love less warmly the friends of his earlier and more struggling years, and he was often able, as time went on, to help those who had been so good to him then, and who had, perhaps, some of them, been less fortunate than himself in later years. He was uncommonly faithful, there was no false pride about James, and I think all who knew him best must have felt his great desire to help all who needed it and who came to him for advice and help in many difficult times. He bore his troubles very quietly, but they left a deep

mark upon him and his sympathies grew wider. But out of the struggles of his early life and the weight of responsibility and pressure in his youth and the sorrows of his middle life, there came to be a gravity about him which struck people most who knew him least. He was certainly a grave young man, especially as he went about his work in those earlier years. But when he was off on a holiday with happy companions and all the world in front of him, then *where* was the gravity? He would spring into the train always with some such words as these, 'Hurrah! now we are off to seek our fortunes' and with that all the cares would be cast aside and off he would go to enjoy everything and everybody that came along. No one ever enjoyed a holiday and travel more than he did; he loved the adventure of it, and had always endless plans for seeing and doing fresh things.

In 1877 his office work was extremely exacting, and many heavy and important cases occupied his time and thought. A great deal of evening work became essential, but this came in big rushes, and between times his social engagements were as active and constant as ever.

His educational interests were also very much alive and growing steadily. He was now Vice-President of the Board of Directors of the Liverpool Institute and Blackburne House Schools, and from time to time had to conduct the meetings.

'The Society for the Promotion of Higher Education' started in connection with Queen's College also took much of his time, and brought him into close contact with those most keenly interested in the higher branches of Education in the City.

It was to the evening classes at Queen's College he owed the only available help in working for his University Degree, and he remained always afterwards keenly interested in its welfare. Certainly his active

interest in Education was, as public work, growing visibly.

An old schoolfellow out in India, writing to him at this time said, ' You are taking plenty of time for your essay on Matthew Arnold, Arnold seems to be a great favourite of yours.' And so, indeed, he was more and more of a favourite. The essay on Matthew Arnold was prepared for by long reading and study, and not only as a poet was he fascinating James more and more, but in his far reaching thoughts on Higher Education and on its growing needs and future developments he was leading James, too, into far reaching thoughts and hopes.

That autumn, 1877, in the Engadine, he began his high alpine climbing, making several big ascents. On September 19th, he climbed the Piz Palü with Mr. Townley. This was the first of several big climbs which they made together in years to come, but James always said it was the most beautiful climb he ever made, and the lovely glittering three-peaked mountain remained always his favourite, towering up as it does in such a noble way and so purely white. The climb took them over the three peaks and down the further side, which fascinated James, who never cared to return home the way he went.

On a visit to his parents after his return, he went to the Oratory to hear John Henry Newman preach. Newman always deeply impressed James ; he admired his spiritual strength and purity, and read and possessed many of his books. In years to come he made many long journeys in order to hear him again.

At this time James attended the Unitarian Church in Birkenhead, where the Rev. Wm. Binns was minister, whose sincerity and rugged strength and originality appealed to him. He knew Mr. Binns well, and to those who pierced behind this rough exterior there was a bigness of intellect and a love of truth which

attracted James, though, like all who knew Mr. Binns best, he sighed over his many eccentricities and often uncouth manners. Mr. Binns was certainly a literary genius and one of the finest Shakespeare scholars. At the Literary and Scientific Society in Birkenhead he was a great figure, and those were the days when that Society numbered among its members a group of singularly fine speakers and scholars and a great variety of men of very different schools of thought. The discussions after the papers were often very brilliant and the meetings well attended. Already in 1877 James was an active member, but in the years that followed he took a very leading part, and was twice President of the Society in 1882 and in 1896.

At the end of January, 1878, James read his paper on Matthew Arnold before the Philomathic Debating Society in Liverpool. It was received with enthusiasm and was widely read outside the Society. Matthew Arnold himself wrote in appreciation of it, and in late years Mrs. Cropper, Matthew Arnold's sister, spoke to James of what he had once written about her brother. Matthew Arnold wrote himself, 'I have just read your criticism, and can thank you for it, which I do most warmly. To be so kindly and sympathetically treated makes up for much and long misrepresentation and disparagement I assure you.'

In the early months of 1878, a very great deal of discussion was taking place in Liverpool, amongst those interested in improving the opportunities for Higher Education, as to the possibility of forming a University College in the City. On May 24, 1878, a large Town's Meeting was called for this purpose, and James's name appears on the circular and advertisement calling this Town's Meeting, and James in writing to his father said: 'It was a most successful meeting, Mr. Beard, I think, made the best speech.' This was the first public meeting that took place about the College, and

six months later in November of this same year, 1878, in another letter to his father, he says : ' There was a second Town's Meeting last week about forming a University College for Liverpool, a scheme was adopted and a large Committee formed to carry it out, and they have since elected me as an additional member of the Committee ' ; and on November 18, he was appointed on a special Sub-Committee empowered to receive subscriptions and make payments, and to carry out the scheme.

James was intensely keen about this project, but he was young and modest, and was content to work hard but quietly for the great cause he had so much at heart. He gave, however, much time and thought to it, and eagerly helped forward in every way he could the general interest in the scheme which was spreading slowly. It was, however, nearly a year and a half before the next public meeting took place.

In the early days of the following year the Reform Club in Liverpool was opened by the Marquis of Hartington, and James, who at that time was a keen Liberal, took much interest in the event, and was present at the opening and at the great banquet that followed.

At the beginning of 1879 he was unanimously appointed a member of the *Council* of Queen's College, Liverpool, which not only prepared students for the London University degree in Arts but for the London Medical degree also, and had, for a short time, possibly a year, had a Council representing both ' The Association for the Promotion of Higher Education ' and ' the Old Medical School,' which had for so many years been carried on in connection with the Royal Infirmary. It was on this *Joint Council* that James was now elected, and it was this Medical School which being at first associated with the College was finally taken over by University College as its Medical School,

three years after the College itself started and at the time when it became a part of the Victoria University.

It was on this Joint Council that James learnt to know Dr. Caton so well, and that he was brought into such close intercourse with Mr. Sephton, who began his Headmastership of the Liverpool Institute the year James left the School.

At the office in 1879 one heavy case followed another, and James was working early and late and constantly travelling up and down to London. Early in July he wrote to his father : ' On Saturday I had an attack of Hay Fever which completely prostrated me, so that on Sunday I was hardly awake even after I got up, and have not recovered yet.' These attacks of hay fever were terribly severe and made June and July a time of misery for him, and had a great deal to do with the exhausted condition in which he found himself when at last he set off on his holiday abroad.

In August, 1879, he was more than usually exhausted, and was thankful to get away with John MacKelvie to the Engadine, and leave his heavy work for a time, but even then he had to travel round in Switzerland to Waltwyl so that he might collect evidence for a big law case which was coming on in the autumn for some Swiss clients. I expect this was one of the times which John MacKelvie wrote of when he said : ' Alsop was a martyr of hay fever in those summers, and when we reached our destination he would be quite prostrate for a day or two, but would steadily recover and then do some of the great Alpine climbs that required considerable strength and endurance. Until he recovered he would lie out on the sunny slopes while I read aloud from one or another of our books.'

It was on this holiday in the Engadine that James made the ascent of the Piz Bernina with Mr. Townley. Of this memorable day Mr. Townley writes : ' Outside the Victoria Station in a conspicuous place there is a

gigantic photograph of Piz Bernina, and when I pass the photograph I always think of one of the very happy days I have had and with one of the best companions it has been my good fortune to be with upon a mountain.'

On December 9th, James again writes to his father about the proposed University College ; he says : ' We had a meeting of the Committee for promoting the new College in Liverpool last Friday, with the Mayor in the Chair. The meeting took place in the Council Chamber of the Town Hall, although only about 15 were present, including Mr. Wm. Rathbone, Mr. Beard and myself.'

January and February, 1880, saw great progress made in gathering in subscriptions for the proposed University College. James was helping enthusiastically, and I have found many letters written at this time between James and Mr. Campbell Brown, and between James and Mr. Beard, about subscriptions each was collecting for the fund.

In May, 1880, he wrote to his father : ' The New College Scheme is proceeding very well, several large promises have lately been received, and the amount now promised is between £50,000 and £60,000. We had a Committee meeting to-day, and I expect that a public appeal for subscriptions will be made before long. The money will not be collected until £80,000 is promised.'

On July 21, 1880, a third Town's Meeting was held, at which James was present.

These years 1880 and 1881 were years for James of very hard work at his profession, of rapidly increasing practice, and of growing interest, both in public work and in politics, his social life also keeping as lively as ever.

Early in 1880 a General Election took place. In Liverpool the Liberals hoped to get Mr. Rathbone in for South West Lancashire, but though great efforts were made, they failed to do so. James was deeply

interested in this election, and his father who had a vote for that part of the County, came to Liverpool alone, blind as he was, to give his vote for Mr. Rathbone, James meeting him at the station and taking him to vote, and putting him into the train again later on his way back to Birmingham.

The Assizes were on at the time of the Elections, and in consequence James was too busy to take any part in the Elections themselves beyond voting and waiting for results at the Reform Club in the evenings. He was also in 1880 on the Committee of the Law Society, and this Committee was unusually active just then, engaged in discussing the Bankruptcy and other Bills then before Parliament, and for a long period of time they had meetings almost every day. He was also working at his Vice-Presidential Address to be read before the Philomathic Society in Liverpool on 'Home Rule,' to which he was very strongly opposed, and on which question at a later time he left the Liberal Party altogether.

His address on 'Home Rule' was an essay stating in the fairest and most open way the history of, and in many cases the evils of, the past government of Ireland, and the slow but steady efforts made by England to change these disabilities of Ireland and give her the fullest rights and privileges enjoyed by the rest of the inhabitants of the British Isles. He pointed out the difficulties and impossibilities of effecting all these reforms at once, and pleaded for a continuation of these remedial efforts as a far stabler way to a lasting unity and peace and justice, than the separate government of a country so close upon our shores and so bound to us by relations and ties which could never be severed.

In April the Address was delivered and a very lively debate followed, a large and interested audience being present. The paper was afterwards published and had

a wide circulation, and there was much controversy over it and a great amount of interest aroused.

During May a vacancy occurred in the District Registrarship of the Lancashire Chancery Court. The Law Society were desirous that a Solicitor should be appointed, and James was approached as to whether he would consent to stand for the appointment. But he did not accept, preferring to keep his independent position.

James's letters to his father and mother which were so constant, and which they treasured and put away so carefully, throw a strong light on his affectionate and dutiful devotion to them and on his eagerness to brighten their days spent apart from him. Every week, in spite of his busy days, he managed to visit some of their old friends and send news of and messages from them, and this went on week after week, and year after year, never failing, and his thoughtfulness for them speaks through these letters continually. When he went to visit them, he would take his mother many little things she loved from special shops in Liverpool in which she had great faith, and every day almost he sent papers with accounts of local happenings in which they would be interested, and his 'Spectator' went to them each week. He took his mother hyacinths to grow in her windows as he grew them in his, and kept his father up in business news, as through his blindness he could not follow things himself. His father was a vehement character, very full of interests and energy, and the fact that he was held back from doing so many things by his blindness, made him all the more determined to do everything and go everywhere he possibly could, and he grew as the years went by, without realising it, very exacting on those about him. James was often very anxious about his mother, who was left weak and frail after her long years of struggle, and was often quite unfit to do all that was expected

of her and all which she desired so earnestly herself never to fail in doing.

During the week-ends James spent with them he himself took his father about, and always on Sundays took him to distant churches to hear someone preach in whom he was specially interested. Generally they went both morning and evening, and even within quite a short time of his last illness, his father took services himself in spite of his blindness.

As the months passed by, the scheme for a University College was more and more talked of, and all kinds of preparations were being made. In March, 1881, James spent an interesting week-end at Mr. Sam Rathbone's house talking over the prospects of the new College.

In these years James often took his short spring holiday in London, and in 1881 he spent a week there, and during the time joined a party invited by Mr. Edgar Holland to go to 'The Oaks.' I think this was the only race meeting he ever went to, but he greatly enjoyed it, and he writes : 'The day was gloriously fine and at 9 o'clock I set off with the Hollands upon a magnificent drag with 4 horses for Epsom. There were eleven of us altogether and 5 of them ladies. We drove to the course in about $3\frac{1}{2}$ hours, and took up a good position, after which we enjoyed an excellent lunch until the races began. We were on the course 3 or 4 hours, and saw 3 races, two of which were certainly very fine. The crowd was enormous, but we left early and reached London comfortably by 8 o'clock.' Another evening in this week he dined with the Incorporated Law Society, and during his time in London saw a variety of old friends, and visited picture galleries and theatres with them, and joined a party on the river at Windsor and had another coach drive to Guildford. In this way he kept up with his many

friends, enjoying things with them and learning to know them better.

In August he was again in Switzerland with Mr. Holland and Mr. Gibson Sinclair, climbing at Chamonix, and finally crossed the great Glacier Pass Col de Giant to Courmayeur. Later he met Mr. Birrell and they enjoyed some walking and climbing together at Zermatt.

At a meeting of the Shakespeare Literary Society in the autumn, James read a paper on Milton's *Comus*, and after the paper the masque itself was read by members of the Society, followed by some discussion, and a charming evening was spent.

In December James wrote to his parents that he had attended the first meeting of the Court of Governors of University College and that Lord Derby was in the chair. This was a great step forward, and at this meeting James was elected a life member of the Court.

In the years 1880 and 1881, James often came to my father's house. They saw a good deal of each other in one way and another, and met often at the Literary Society and at the X.Y.Z. Club, the members of which met at dinner at each other's houses and had discussions afterwards. James was also a friend of my grandfather and aunt in Liverpool, Mr. and Miss Thornely, who had known him since he was a boy, and we often met him at dances, societies and parties of all kinds. In the winter of 1881 he took part in some private theatricals with us, the preparations for which extended over many weeks, and before the New Year he wrote to his parents: 'Our play was performed last Thursday and Friday, and went off very well. The audience were appreciative. The performers are all sorry that the play is over, but perhaps the audience are not. I expect Mr. and Mrs. Mott at all events are glad to have some approach to quietness in their home again.'

James was full of energy! Early in the New Year

at the close of a busy day, he travelled to Birmingham to attend a great political meeting, returning as far as Chester that night. Of this meeting he wrote to his father: 'Mr. Bright is a little feeble than when I heard him last, but there was no difficulty in hearing what he said. As a speech, however, Mr. Chamberlain's was, in my opinion, superior. Mr. Dale made a good, short, telling speech. We came back by the 10.30 train. To-night I am going to the banquet to Lord Derby at the Reform Club, and Birrell is coming home with me and will stay with me a few days,' and in a later letter he writes: 'Birrell and I were at Ulverscroft on Thursday at the Billsons, where we had theatricals and dancing, and on Friday we were at Mr. Gray Hill's where we had a Shakespeare recital, and on Saturday I had a select party of friends to meet Birrell at dinner in my rooms.' In this same letter he tells his father of the opening of University College which was to take place in a few days time, and in a later letter he says: 'There was a very successful meeting to inaugurate University College last Saturday, and afterwards a reception at St. George's Hall, at which about 2500 people were present.'

In May James was elected President of the Literary and Scientific Society in Birkenhead, which meant preparing a Presidential Address by the autumn and presiding at all the fortnightly meetings during the following session.

In June he visited the House of Commons and remained from 7 to 2 o'clock, greatly interested in listening to the House in Committee on the Irish Crimes Prevention Bill, only two clauses of the Bill being passed during the 7 hours, and about 20 Irish Home Rulers making on an average about 5 speeches each. He thought them a curious set, but Parnell struck him as very able.

In the early autumn after his return from

Switzerland, he wrote to his father : 'On Thursday I am to dine with Malcolm Guthrie who is entertaining the Professors of University College, and has invited me to meet them,' and a few days later of this same party he wrote : 'Nearly all the College Professors were there and the Rev. Charles Beard, Mr. E. R. Russell and others besides, and the conversation was very lively. On Saturday,' he adds, 'I was present at the distribution of prizes in connection with the College, when Matthew Arnold delivered an address which I enjoyed very much indeed but which has given rise to a good deal of difference of opinion here.' This address was on 'Lucidity,' which Mr. Arnold described as meaning the power in a nation of seeing things as they are, and of being able to see and feel when customs and beliefs and institutions have been superseded and have ceased to be useful, and something else is needed instead. The English nation, he asserted, did not possess this power, it wanted to keep its old customs and its old beliefs and its old ways of doing things, and was behind the Germans and the French in this power of lucidity which they possessed. He illustrated this very definitely in regard to public secondary education for the middle classes, and pointed to Germany as having in all towns State assisted Secondary Schools leading up to the University. He pointed to the miserable condition of public secondary education for the middle classes in England, the comparatively few schools of this type and the too low standard of learning reached there. He spoke of the Institute and the Collegiate Schools in Liverpool as being some of the best of their type in English towns, and said they deserved the title of Public Schools, but he suggested that these were not nearly enough, and he reiterated again and again his famous call, 'Organise your Secondary Education.' Liverpool was certainly irate, it had not expected to be so talked to, at the

first prize distribution of its University College which it had just founded, and it was very proud of its Institute and its Collegiate Schools. There was a good deal of resentment expressed in the discussions that followed during the next few weeks, but there were some who welcomed Mr. Arnold's words, and in James's mind and thought seeds were sown that day which never ceased to grow.

For a long time at the end of 1882 his friend Edgar Holland was very seriously ill. James was intensely anxious and went over and stayed with him until Mrs. Holland arrived, and was constantly backwards and forwards afterwards doing what he could for him. At the beginning of the year he was better, and James tells his father of two beautiful Bartolozzi engravings which Edgar had sent him.

1883 proved an intensely busy year for James, with Bank amalgamations and other big things going on at the office and occupying much time and thought. University College, too, was very active and getting well into harness and gradually extending in new directions, and the Reform Club was active and made constant claims upon him as a member of its Committee.

In these years James often spent week-ends with his friends, and about this time spent another delightful week-end at Mr. Sam Rathbone's house, where he met at dinner Principal Rendall and Professor Bradley and a great talk followed on the College doings and outlook.

In August he met Edgar Holland in Switzerland, and before they returned they climbed the Wetterhorn from Grindelwald. Having spent the night in the Hut above the precipices they started the climb in the early hours of the morning. It proved a terrifically hot day and the climb, in consequence, was a very long one, as the heat of the sun made the snow soft, and the going became heavy and difficult. Coming down James

became exhausted and could no longer see anything in front of him, and when they at last reached the Hut he insisted on going no further, feeling that he should endanger his own life and everyone else's if he attempted to go down the rope ladders on the face of the great precipices when he was in that condition. There was, however, no food left, except for one, and only half a candle in the Hut and no firewood. James insisted that they should all go down and leave him alone in the Hut, feeling sure he would get right again if he could lie down and sleep. The guides argued and refused to leave him, but he was adamant, and eventually they all left him, promising to return the next morning and bring up food and fire and take him down, but they exacted a promise from him first that he would not attempt to go down alone. So he stayed in this lonely Hut and shared his sandwiches with a mouse which came out to look at him and struggled all night with him for the half candle which it wanted to eat. In the morning when he looked out it was snowing hard, and the Guides had warned him that snow was coming and might prevent their return. However, up they came about noon with firewood and chicken and brandy, and quickly made him a good meal, and as he was quite recovered and better, they had a fine scramble down and found Edgar Holland anxiously waiting for them at the Hotel. James used to enjoy telling the story of how he and the mouse spent the night together on the Wetterhorn.

It was, however, the last of his many big climbs ; he never attempted anything quite so long again.

On his way home, James came to my father's house at Harrow Weald, and my sister Elsie became engaged to him. They had long known one another and had many tastes and interests in common and congratulations flowed in upon them from every side.

But their happiness was shadowed very soon by

Elsie's failing health. As the winter returned she took cold again, and was laid up for months, the old weakness returning left by a recent illness in Switzerland. James's father, also, became almost hopelessly ill, and James himself was attacked by severe rheumatism, so that the next year or two were years of grave anxiety. Sometimes Elsie would get better and sometimes James's rheumatism would improve, but his father became steadily worse, and died in December, 1884.

In the early spring of 1885, both James and Elsie seemed better, and they were both filled with hope and began to plan their wedding for the summer. But it was not to be. As the sunny days came back Elsie grew rapidly weaker, and James had only left Harrow Weald a few hours when, on June 19th, she became suddenly worse, and died before he could return.

Elsie had always been to me my dearest possession ; we had done almost everything together all our lives, and it was my first meeting with death. How sadly I remember, when James came back that night, going to meet him with the terrible news. It was in the mutual agony of loss in those days and weeks and months that followed that we were drawn so closely together, and fifteen months later we were married.

That autumn, 1885, James went away for a long holiday, not to the old haunts that year, but to Norway, the Doctor urging he should go north. A cousin of ours, Theodore Coppock, a young barrister on the Northern Circuit, went with him, and also a young nephew of Theodore's. They went to the Jottenheim and climbed there amongst the ice and snow, and took long carriage journeys each driving his own pony. It was all new and fresh to James, and they took Sweden and Denmark on their way home. At Upsala they visited the University and attended service in the Cathedral, and James was charmed

with the beautiful voices of the Swedes, and he wrote : ' their tunes are slow and solemn like the Chorales which Bach and Mendelssohn introduced into their Oratorios.'

James returned better altogether for the change and at once took up his work again. His mother had returned to Birkenhead some months before, and was settled very near him, and this was a joy and comfort to them both.

Not long after James's return from Norway, it was arranged for Mr. Kennedy, Q.C., to stand as the Liberal Candidate in Birkenhead at the coming Parliamentary Election, and he asked James to help him fight the Election as his Agent.

It was a fierce battle, and they lost in the end, and General Hamley was returned. In a letter from James describing it, he says : ' It was indeed disappointing, for we seemed to have all the elements of success, a strong, fine candidate who won golden opinions wherever he went and a zealous hearty band of workers. We had splendid public meetings, 10 large evening meetings and two day meetings. The last evening meeting was one of the finest, perhaps *the* finest public meeting ever held in Birkenhead. It was in the Engineers' Drill Shed opposite Laird's works, and the immense hall was crowded with over 4,000 people, who were most enthusiastic and cheered and sang till you would imagine that victory was certain. But by that time I knew that without the Parnellite vote we would not win against the strong, bitter Tory Party, who had frightened many Liberals by raising issues which were not fairly before the electors. And so, on Tuesday night when Mr. Parnell came to Birkenhead and told the Irish electors to vote for General Hamley because he was a stick to beat the Liberal Party with, I felt sure we should be beaten. However, we continued to work hard all through Wednesday

just as if we were going to win. The poll was announced about 11 p.m., and I can tell you I was tired and worn out. Mr. Kennedy was prepared for the result and bore it bravely and made a capital little speech afterwards.

I quite hope Mr. Kennedy will stand for Birkenhead when another vacancy occurs. I don't regret having taken part in the contest, though a good deal of the work was such as I did not care for. But it was very interesting to come in contact with a number of earnest politicians, many of them working men, and learn how they regard the various questions of the day.'

During the time they were so closely thrown together, Mr. Kennedy and James had had intimate talks on many subjects, especially literature, which was of great interest to both, and when Christmas came Mr. Kennedy sent James a charming gift, six volumes of Jane Austen's novels and three volumes of Matthew Arnold's poems. The first, he said, was his own favourite, and the second he believed was James's favourite.

In January, 1886, James wrote : ' Certainly the times are stirring enough politically, and it is even more interesting to watch history in the making than to read it when made and described in a book. I am not altogether glad of the way the Liberals are going into power again. I fear that they will be hampered by concessions to the Home Rulers and to the extreme Radicals. But Mr. Gladstone's genius for politics has been so conspicuously shewn in the past that I don't despair of his reconciling all sections of the party. If he has to rely upon any one section he will fail ; it is when the *whole* party is united upon a policy that it is bound to win great victories.'

James was here beginning to look with grave misgiving on Mr. Gladstone's new undertakings, and

to see in them an indication of some new policy in which he might not be able to follow him.

In April he wrote: 'To-night I am going to a meeting of Liberals in Liverpool to discuss Mr. Gladstone's scheme. My opinion is that the scheme, wonderful as it is, will be found impracticable, and I expect it will be defeated in the House of Commons.'

Two days later, on April 15th, he wrote: 'I went to the meeting of the Liberals of Abercromby Division and, contrary to my intention, made a speech. It was a strange and new experience speaking to 200 or 300 people, the large majority of whom were against me in opinion. However, they were tolerant and patient on the whole, and listened very fairly. When it came to the voting, I was beaten by about 12 to 1.'

At the beginning of May, he wrote: 'I am going to help in forming a Liberal Committee in Liverpool to oppose the Home Rule proposals. People tell me one might as well oppose the Atlantic Ocean, but I don't believe in the inevitableness of a change simply because a large number of people adopt it.'

On the 15th he wrote: 'Our Liberal Unionist Committee is getting very strong. We have about 120 names, many of them well-known Liberals. I am one of a small Committee of six who have to do the work. It seems now very likely that Mr. Gladstone's Bill will be defeated, and this will show that free expression of opinion *is* sometimes effectual, notwithstanding the hopeless feeling of many people that when a change is once proposed it is bound to come.'

On May 17th he writes: 'I think we shall have some kind of Unionist Liberal Meeting in Liverpool, but probably not until after the Government Bill is thrown out, as it is most likely to be. The Sub-Committee want me to write a pamphlet embodying some of the ideas in my Home Rule paper and applying them more

specially to the present time, but I fear I may not have time to do so. However, I am considering the matter.'

All through this spring, 1886, James had an immense variety of things on hand all pressing to be done and many of which took up much time. In the early months of the year, he was reading hard in preparation for a paper on Voltaire which he had promised to write for the Literary and Scientific Society in Birkenhead. His old school friends, Roberts and Lloyd, joined him on every possible evening that could be arranged, and they read through together several works of Voltaire in the original French and spent many studious and happy evenings discussing Voltaire and his books as they went along. James was also reading hard on his own account in preparation for the paper, and it was absorbing a good deal of time. The subject was entirely new to him, and grew in interest as he went along.

He was also during this spring busy and interested over a 'Board of Legal Studies' then being formed in Liverpool.

The Reform Club Library, too, was requiring a good deal of attention. James was Chairman of this Library Committee, and had given much consideration to the selection of books for it, which now numbered 2,000 volumes of historical and political works, and in 1886 new shelves had to be arranged for.

When June arrived, the Home Rule Bill had been defeated by a large majority and the coming General Election on the question of Home Rule for Ireland was absorbing James's thoughts and energies. I think it will be interesting to give some of his own words taken from letters written by him at the time which show how hard he worked for the Unionist cause and how strongly opposed he was to Home Rule.

On June 9th he wrote: 'I fear Mr. Kennedy will

be asked to stand for Birkenhead as a Gladstonian Liberal, though he personally would prefer a less sweeping measure. I had a long conversation with him to-day, and I think he will stand. But I told him I was very sorry I could not, with my opinions on Home Rule, work for him this time, though I have promised to do my best to find him a good election Agent. I don't think he will succeed, but the Home Rule Irish vote in Birkenhead may be stronger than I suppose, and may be sufficient to turn the balance. I have spent a lot of time at our Unionist Committees and learnt a good deal of what is going on in various parts of the country. It will be a bitter contest I fear, and will, perhaps, not finally decide the great question.'

On June 13th he wrote: 'I have been consulted to-day about forming a Unionist Committee in Birkenhead.'

June 14th. 'The Meeting at Henglers Circus yesterday was one of the grandest sights I have ever seen. The huge building was crowded with enthusiastic Liberals. I was fortunate in getting a good place in the reserved seats. I reached the door at 1.30, and ten minutes afterwards it was opened, and we rushed in and waited there till 3, when Mr. Gladstone arrived. The interval was relieved by a brass band, and by cheers and groans as familiar names were shouted or well-known people came in.

At last Mr. Gladstone came, and I wish you could have seen the greeting he had from the vast multitude. He spoke for an hour and three-quarters. The speech was extremely clever, and the variety, the humour, the scorn, the pathos were most fine; every friendly interruption (and there were no unfriendly ones) was turned by him to good account, and he carried the audience with him. But I could not help noticing that the enthusiasm was for himself rather than for his Irish policy, and no speech of his ever pleased me so

little, though I have never heard one so clever. There was a certain amount of acting and even claptrap instead of argument, and mixed up with other passages which were of high eloquence and dignity. To-night we have our Unionist meeting in the same Hall, and Lord Derby will have to defend our manifesto against Mr. Gladstone's contemptuous treatment. I expect we shall have a large but a stormy meeting.'

June 15th. 'Mr. Birrell is likely to stand as a Home Ruler for the Widnes Division of Lancashire and has some chance of success. I shall be very glad when the Elections are over, for I foresee that there will be great bitterness between the two sections of Liberals. Mr. Kennedy has got an Election Agent, and they are hard at work.'

June 16th. 'I don't know yet whether there will be any *Unionist Liberal* candidates at Liverpool, if there are I *must* help to work for them, as there will be few workers.'

June 25th. 'I certainly think that the tone of Mr. Gladstone's speeches is inferior to what it was, he seems to become more personal and less argumentative. In fact, everyone is getting heated and undignified. The Unionist Meeting was rather a noisy affair, and there was great difference of opinion amongst the audience. I spoke for a quarter of an hour, and, strange to say, had a better hearing than anyone else, the audience applauding a good deal, though a great many evidently did not agree with me.'

'Yesterday I went to a Tennis Party at Mr. Billson's. I did not join in the game, but talked politics with those who remained outside. Everyone was a Home Ruler except myself, and I had uphill work. Mr. Birrell was there, and Mr. David Duncan, the candidate for Exchange Division. This afternoon I am going to Mr. Gray Hill's to tea to discuss the

Liberal Unionist attitude in Birkenhead. I shall be very glad when the elections are over.'

July 1st. 'Our meeting at Henglers Circus was a very fine one, and showed that there are a great many Liberal Unionists in Liverpool. Last night I went to a Liberal Unionist meeting in Scotland Division, and it was a scene of great confusion. There was an organised body of Irish Parnellites, who sang and shouted and cheered so as to stop the proceedings almost altogether until, after enduring it for more than an hour, the rest of the audience rose and turned out forcibly all the disturbers, perhaps a hundred in number. The attempt of the Irish to interfere in meetings of the opposite side and prevent a fair hearing is on a par with their obstruction in Parliament, and is one of the proofs, to my mind, of the undesirability of giving the Irish a Parliament of their own. Well, the elections will soon clear the air, and I fully hope for a decisive Unionist victory.'

July 3rd. 'The result of the election in Birkenhead is to me very satisfactory, for the result shows either that the Irish vote is much overrated or that the Liberal Unionists are very strong. For Mr. Kennedy personally, I am very sorry; he had again made a splendid fight, and fought with the finest tone and courtesy as is acknowledged by the Conservatives. Yesterday's results confirm me in my opinion that Mr. Gladstone's party will lose instead of gaining seats by the dissolution.'

July 5th. 'To-day I had the pleasure of voting for a Liberal once more, Sir John Lubbock for London University; he is a Liberal Unionist and sure to be returned. This is the last I shall have to do with the present election. The Unionists made a large gain on Saturday, and this will continue and increase, I hope and believe. What will happen after I dare not predict, but I am sure it will be less calamitous

than it would be if Mr. Gladstone's Bill or measures like it were to pass.'

July 7th. 'The elections continue to go on very favourably, more so than I had even expected. But there will not be a majority of Conservatives over all other parties: the Unionist Liberals will hold the balance of power.'

July 29th. 'I had a long and friendly talk with Mr. Kennedy to-day about the Birkenhead election. He was very nice about it, though he seemed to think our Committee had had a good deal to do with his defeat.'

In these extracts from letters, those who knew James best will see how strongly he was feeling this break in his old party and the differences of opinion which had arisen between himself and many of his oldest and closest friends. He felt it intensely, but he never faltered in following the course which appeared to him right, and his disappointment in Mr. Gladstone was never afterwards made good. His old friends he kept, possibly with a certain indefinable difference, but they were his dear old friends ever and always to the last.

CHAPTER III

1886-1904

ON August 25th, 1886, we were married at Harrow Weald Church. A quiet wedding on a beautiful summer morning. Then for seven weeks of unclouded sunshine and great heat, we wandered through Belgium, Germany, Switzerland, and France, staying three weeks in the dear Engadine, and in October reached Harrow Weald again with brown cheeks and faded clothes, and two days later came home. On one of the last days in the Engadine, we crossed the Diavalezza with the old guide Christian Grass, who had taken James in past years up so many great peaks. He was very happy and very proud to take us both that day, on what he told us was to be his very last journey as guide. I have his portrait still, a fine, strong, kindly face with a great beard, and his rope swung about his shoulders.

For many years George Eliot's novels had been favourites with James and myself. Mr. Cross's *Life of George Eliot* was published shortly before our marriage, and we took the book away with us, and when we came home we called our new home 'Griff' after George Eliot's old home.

Our Griff was a pretty home inside, with charming views from the windows of Welsh hills and of Snowdon. The house was not pretty outside, but it grew more charming as the creepers gathered round it. The garden grew gayer every year. How we loved that garden, as plants were sent to us from many friends, and we brought home plants ourselves from wanderings

on many holidays and tended and watched them grow. No garden of its size and kind was ever prettier. We had a door into it from the hall, and this in summer time always stood open, and I can still smell the sweet scent of flowers that blew in and see the glow of colour that burst upon you as you stepped outside.

It was a busy house and withal very peaceful. Many friends came and went in those happy busy days.

We had some ups and downs of fortune in our first year. On a short holiday in December James got blood-poisoning from bad drainage, and was so ill all January that we had to go away in February to the South of France, where he could be out all day and have more sunshine. It was May before he was well enough to come home again. But though he worked so hard on his return he went on steadily getting stronger, and the rheumatism which had been such a trial years before seemed gone altogether.

James was at this time intensely interested in the work of the Law Society in Liverpool, and in the provision of better educational opportunities for the Law students. Indeed to Law in those days he gave his best strength, and many of his most intimate friends were largely in the Law World too.

In April, 1888, Matthew Arnold died very suddenly when on a visit to Liverpool. The next morning James left home early as he was going to London, taking the newspaper with him to read on the way, and later he sent it back to me with a note saying: 'My eye caught the announcement of Matthew Arnold's death on a placard soon after I left this morning. The news seemed to send a chill through me which I cannot get rid of; one has lost a friend; the source of many a good impulse and suggestion.'

Matthew Arnold's death was a great personal sorrow to James. Although he had hardly done more than exchange a few words with him and receive two

letters from him, he had for Matthew Arnold a reverence and love and an affinity of soul through which I am sure he was brought as near to him as if in truth they had shared an active friendship. To hear James read his poetry, especially certain poems, was to realise how it expressed himself in the intenser moments of his life.

In 1888 James was elected President of the Philomathic Debating Society in Liverpool, and in September gave his Presidential Address on 'Representative Government and the Swiss Referendum.' The paper pointed out the working difficulties of Democracy, especially in connection with the modern representative system, and called attention to the importance of discovering the best machinery for overcoming these working difficulties. It was the outcome of a tendency in James at that time to dwell on political problems and democratic problems, especially after the voice of the majority had spoken so strongly against the Home Rule Bill.

At the Annual Dinner of the Philomathic Society during James's Presidency, the Hon. J. R. Lowell and His Honour Judge Hughes were the guests of the evening. James, who knew them both, had a very delightful evening with them, and the speaking after the dinner had a fine high tone about it, besides being extremely racy and humorous.

James had met Lowell some little time before the Dinner took place, and had had much talk with him about Matthew Arnold, and had afterwards sent him his paper on Matthew Arnold, and Lowell had written : 'I have read your paper with much interest. Your estimate of Arnold seems to me in the main excellent, and considering how much you admired him, I think you have maintained your judicial equipoise remarkably well. It is pleasant to think that it must have pleased him.'

In that same autumn of 1888 there came amongst a rush of things, Dr. Rendall's beautiful lectures on Homer, which were delivered in Liverpool before the Ladies Educational Society and were greatly enjoyed.

The activities of the College were spreading further afield, and I remember James eagerly helping to organize courses of lectures in Birkenhead given by the College Professors, Mr. T. R. Hughes the Barrister being Secretary for them, and James Treasurer. Professor Oliver Lodge, Professor Herdman, and Professor Strong each gave a course of lectures in Birkenhead about this time.

The Professors, too, came often to our house, and James was always busy with some plans or suggestions for the development and extension of this great home of learning so rapidly growing up in our midst. He had the interest of it greatly at heart, and I remember how everyone who came was drawn to talk to him about it.

At this time James's mother was living quite near to us, and after their long years apart it was a wonderful joy to them both to be again so much together, and she and I greatly loved each other. She often went with us on short holidays in England and Scotland, and in 1889 went to Switzerland with us. Although her heart was not strong and she was very frail, with James's careful, thoughtful management, she went through it all well, and greatly enjoyed it. Sometimes she and I would go to London together that she might see the sights of London, one each day, very quietly. She would stay too at Harrow Weald for long visits to my father and mother, and go with them also to see things. She had been married so young, and then her husband's blindness had so soon come upon him. It was no use his going to see things, and she never left him, so that she had seen very little, and I believe

it was one of the greatest delights in James's life to see his mother enjoy these pleasures now.

James was working at this time with intense vigour at his profession, but always hoping that a time would come some day when he could slacken business and be freer to give himself to public work. On reading through old letters from him about this time, I am amazed at the rushing life he led and the numbers of letters I had from him, for he was up and down to London and in Scotland and other places often several times a week, and would have several big cases on at once in London. Still, in spite of his heavy professional work, his public work grew, and his interest and work for University College became more vital. It was constantly in his mind. He spent more and more time upon it.

His delight in music was great, and he sang a good deal. About this time he made a great effort to take some singing lessons, but they had to be given up as he was seldom able to keep to the hour appointed, and was altogether too busy for such things. But it was a great pity, as he had a beautiful voice and so much taste and feeling for music, and a little more training would have added very much to his pleasure in singing.

James was at this time Chairman of the Committee of Managers of The Hermitage British Schools in Birkenhead, and these Committees met in the evenings. He also had many evening meetings in connection with the Liberal Unionist cause, his interest in which was steadily strengthening, and all the time his social life was very active ; we went out a great deal and entertained a good deal also in a quiet way.

During the ten years before 1899, in which year James entered the Liverpool City Council and began his fuller public life, he was giving his chief energy to Law, and was not only working hard at Law as a

profession and his own business, which was an exacting one, but also for the Incorporated Law Society of Liverpool, taking a very active part in the work of its Committee, and for wider and better opportunities of education for the Law students of Liverpool; and, in his own words, 'for that instruction which should not merely enable them to pass the examinations of the Incorporated Law Society of the United Kingdom, but should fit them for that more exacting Examination which lasts through the whole life of every professional man.'

In the early days of University College, the Council had made provision for Courses of Law Lectures to be delivered by non-resident lecturers, and this led to the formation of a 'Board of Legal Studies' composed of representatives of University College, the Incorporated Law Society and the Law Students Association, all of which made annual contributions towards the maintenance of systematic courses of lectures suitable for Students of Law.

In 1892, however, largely through the joint efforts of Mr. A. F. Warr and James, who in that year were President and Vice-President of the Incorporated Law Society of Liverpool, a three years guarantee fund was raised, providing for the appointment of a resident Professor as well as two or more non-resident lecturers, and for the establishment of a Law Faculty in University College, empowered to act with representatives of the Liverpool Incorporated Law Society and the Law Students Association, upon a reformed Board of Legal Studies.

In July of the same year, 1892, Edward Jenks, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge, and late Professor of Law at Melbourne University, was appointed the first Professor of Law at University College, Liverpool, and increased opportunities were offered to the Law students for studying Law on a

wider and more comprehensive basis than before, and for working for a Law Degree under the guidance of the Professor if they desired to do so.

In December, 1892, just after James became President of the Liverpool Law Society, the Victoria Building of University College was opened, and on the occasion, Earl Spencer, Chancellor of the Victoria University, announced that Her Majesty the Queen desired to contribute £2,000 for the permanent benefit of the College. With Her Majesty's consent this sum became the nucleus of a fully endowed Queen Victoria Chair of Law. The rest of the amount was entirely contributed by the Legal Profession, including contributions from the Lord Lieutenant of the County and the Lord Mayor, and this was completed a little over a year later.

For more than two years now, James had been a member of the Council of University College, which he joined at the close of 1889, when the Council numbered only about 18 members, and he was more and more deeply interested in every step of its progress and was intimately associated with the conduct of its affairs and brought into the closest touch with the varied life and interests of the College.

He was now President of the Incorporated Law Society of Liverpool, and this added much to his work. He had been Vice-President during Mr. Warr's Presidency the year before, and with their combined energy and interest in public things, they had been instrumental in setting going a number of reforms, and James spent much time during his year of office in trying to carry these through.

The system of Assizes in Liverpool at that time had become quite inadequate for dealing quickly with the volume of work constantly coming in, and both he and Mr. Warr worked hard to get some plan taken up, by which these cases might be dealt with oftener, and less

time wasted before urgent business disputes could be settled.

They pleaded for continuous sittings of the court between Manchester and Liverpool, and in the early months of 1893 a very large deputation of legal and business men of Lancashire was received by the Lord Chancellor at the House of Lords, praying for this change, and James as President, with Mr. Squarey and Mr. Warr, represented the Law Society of Liverpool. Though they were never able to get this fully granted, the Assize System was by their efforts very greatly improved, and the length of time between the Assizes reduced, and fixed dates for holding the Assizes established.

James was also at this time often in London over the opposition of the Liverpool Law Society to the Land Transfer Bill, and was busy over several other contentious Bills then before Parliament.

During this year of his Presidency, he was extremely anxious to do what he could to bring the members of the Law Society into closer touch with one another, and foster a spirit of comradeship and good feeling amongst them. He had a number of small dinner parties at his house, generally on Saturday evenings, at which he tried to bring together the older and younger members of the Society and also the better known with the less known members. He was, I remember, very warmly thanked again and again for these little parties, which, it was thought, had brought about at the time, very marked results of kindly feeling and comradeship in the Profession.

In many kinds of ways, all through his life, he was thinking how he could gather people together who would like to meet, and make opportunities for pleasant friendships and intercourse between those who might otherwise not have an opportunity of meeting.

I remember also the joy it was to him to plan

a beautiful holiday abroad and think of someone we could take with us who would enjoy it too, someone who was tired or sad or lonely, or who would specially enjoy the things we were going to see. He did enjoy making good times for people, and I do not remember anyone who travelled with us who was not his special friend afterwards. I know his thoughtfulness for them and his courtesy always struck those who travelled with him. In his home, too, and I think in his office, there was always a feeling of trust and reverence for him, and he was served very faithfully. No one took liberties with him, but his courtesy and kindness won their hearts. I remember more than one maid saying to me: 'Mr. Alsop is not like a master at all,' and indeed they served him eagerly and always took so much pride in him.

In the years between 1871 and 1900 when his profession was his chief thought, how he did work, what big cases came to him, and how hard he worked at them, putting his whole powers and strength into them, and was always eager to acknowledge the help others gave him.

Early in 1892 we spent some days at Edgbaston with Mr. and Mrs. Jesse Collings, and in the following July they came to us. We had met them again in the Engadine the year before, and had taken a driving tour with them on leaving the Engadine. At that time the Unionist cause was a constant topic of conversation, and Mr. Collings urged James to stand for Parliament, and certainly, for some years after, James's thoughts seemed often tending towards politics and a political career, in which *he hoped to do much for education* as well as for the Unionist cause. The split in the Liberal Party over Home Rule, and the energy which had to be put into the formation of the new Liberal Unionist Party, gave zest at the moment and for some time afterwards to this inclination towards a political life.

In the end, however, it was really the means of damping his ardour, as I think he never was so enthusiastic or really quite thoroughly at home, after the Liberal Unionist Party at a later stage merged itself in the Conservative Party.

If the Liberal Unionist Party could have remained and been increased and strengthened as it was, I think this might have drawn his sympathies into a political life. The break with the Liberal Party altogether, was a great wrench to him, it meant a break with interests in which he had grown up, it meant in the end a break with his old associations and work at the Reform Club in Liverpool, and what gave him many a pang, he had to leave the Library there, which he had done so much to start and the growth of which he had watched with so keen an interest, as Chairman of the Library Committee through so many years. He had had a pretty free hand in deciding on the books to be bought, and had afterwards searched for them, found them and watched them growing upon the shelves, and it was in this work and in the making and collecting of his own fine library, that he learnt to know so much about books, the best books on different subjects, the best printing and editions and the history of their production. Many of his intimate friends also took great interest in books, in knowing about them as well as in reading them, and from Mr. Birrell and Mr. Billson he had learnt a great deal.

In August, 1893, we went to the Italian valleys of the Alps, and on our way out stayed at Sass Fee, and as I think of it a simple little scene comes back, but one which was very typical of the way children were always drawn to James.

Mr. Justice Walton was with us, and we were sitting on a grassy mountain side talking, when a little Swiss girl came up with a coloured handkerchief tied about

her head and a stick in her hand, for she was a little cowherd. She came along the grassy slope looking at James all the time, and sat down quietly beside him. A minute later Mr. Justice Walton said to me, smiling as he looked at them: 'We aren't in it, Mrs. Alsop,' and indeed we were not; she was gazing at James with her trustful eyes, and to his quiet questions was pouring out to him her little life history. It was not once, it was always, that the children were drawn to him. At a later stage on this same holiday when we were in the high Italian Valleys at the foot of Monte Rosa, a telegram reached James calling him home to a bankruptcy case which had suddenly taken a serious turn for his clients, and we started at once for home. It was about twenty miles to the Italian plain below, along a rough mountain road at times very steep, and we had a helter-skelter running walk down it, our bags on a mule. Just before starting the muleteer enquired if we should mind taking eight mules with us, as they had finished their summer work on the hills? James was delighted, and thought it fine fun to take them down, but he lived to rue his kindness, for they loitered abominably, and nothing would take them on, and they had to be distributed in various villages on the way where no owners could be found to take them, and at last, as the afternoon advanced, we saw our train go crawling along the valley below on its way to Turin, and we still struggling with our mules on the heights. However, we caught a late night train across the plain after much waiting, and reached Turin before morning, utterly weary and very sick of muleteering.

That autumn proved a very busy one, the bankruptcy case was heavy work, and many things in connection with his Presidency of the Law Society kept him busy. He had also his Presidential Address to prepare and the Report of the Year's work to see to. Before his Presidency of the Law Society came to a close, his

old friend Mr. Kennedy, K.C., who had been made a judge the year before, was entertained at dinner by the Society, and a great Reception was given by the Vice-Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster at University College in connection with the new Law Faculty, and Mr. Justice Kennedy was asked to give the Address.

The year ended for James with a rush of work in London, and the new year brought only a continuance of the same, and all spring he was working at very high pressure and constantly away, and he had so much evening work that I seldom went with him ; but on one of the times when I did, we went to see a wonderful performance of Wagner's Siegfried, which greatly refreshed him.

At Easter we had a few quiet days in the New Forest, and in August joined a large party of friends at Pontresina, and then the rush of London work began again. In a letter I had from him when I was away, he said : ' I have the College Council Meeting this afternoon, and afterwards must be in Manchester on business, and to-night I go to London again.' These were years when the days and evenings seemed as full as they could be, and yet we always seemed to have some quiet reading going on, and though the books we read aloud did not go rapidly, they were deeply enjoyed and never forgotten.

But if James had been busy in 1894, he seemed in 1895 still more constantly occupied, and it was the coldest winter on record. In January, the water was frozen in the mains, and watercarts came round daily. The river Mersey was full of great blocks of ice, and the boats had difficulty in making their way through them. Seagulls assembled about the Mersey in thousands, and stood on the floating ice, and they were fed each day on the Landing Stage. The snow lay hard and frozen on the ground, and everybody's pipes were bursting,

and the cold lasted week after week, and far into the new year. James had a big Cattle Market case on in London, and another very big case also, and spent half his time travelling backwards and forwards over them, and sometimes for days and days did not return, and when he did it was to be called back again a day or two later. The Liverpool Overhead Railway, too, was at an exacting stage of its existence, and kept him busy. James, however, kept well and strong, the sharp bracing air suited him. Occasionally he found time in London to visit some of his old friends, and spent a delightful evening with Mr. Cozens Hardy, whom he had met again the year before, and at Easter he got away to Malvern for a few quiet, delightful days. In July, James was still busy over the Cattle Market Bill, and I went up to London for a night to go with him to the Imperial Institute to a brilliant evening gathering in connection with the Railway Congress then meeting in London. When I reached the hotel, I found James in a private sitting room surrounded by Irish cattle drovers and farmers, who had just arrived as witnesses in the Cattle Market case, which was to come before a Committee of the House of Commons next day. They were being instructed in their duties and being sent off with responsible people to look after them and keep them sober for the morrow. That evening we went to the Imperial Institute and met many interesting people. It was a beautiful, warm summer night, and we walked in the gardens, which were lighted up with thousands of coloured lights, and listened to a beautiful band playing.

All through 1895 James and Mr. Warr had many long talks over their prospects in the political world, if they decided to try for Parliament, and it was at last decided that Mr. Warr should try for Parliament as soon as a favourable opportunity arrived. Nothing, however, of a satisfactory or attractive kind turned up

in the early part of the year, and on July 5th, before the General Election, James wrote to me : ' Mr. Warr is not going to try for Parliament this time, but will wait for an opportunity.'

That summer we had a long and adventurous holiday, at first in many of the remote valleys of the Dolomites and later in Carinthia and Styria : Carinthia, a land of strange uncouth customs, a great haunt of birds of prey, and with a languid, damp, intense heat which took all your strength away. The names of no English visitors were in the Inn books except Professor Bryce, who had been there eight years earlier exploring an ancient Roman Pass. Styria, a wholly different country, with romantic ancient castles, some still inhabited, but many in ruins, crowning every rocky and wooded height is the country George Sand writes of in ' Consuelo,' and Ruskin in ' The King of the Golden River.'

In November, Mr. Warr was adopted for East Toxteth Division of Liverpool unopposed. In the following year James had several constituencies offered to him by the Liberal Unionist Committee in London, but none of them was attractive, and Mr. Warr, who had grown less enthusiastic after first entering Parliament, advised James, whenever they met, not to enter on a political career as it was unsatisfactory.

James hesitated ; he saw more and more clearly the educational work which lay waiting to be done in his own city. He saw the College he was so deeply interested in now growing rapidly, and all the possibilities that lay in front of it ; and he saw the secondary education in the city far below what it ought to be, both in the number of schools and in the standard of education reached there ; and he saw how necessary it had become for secondary education to be entirely reorganised, and to have its standard of learning raised, so that University College, as it developed, should have

the boys and girls in the secondary schools reaching so high a standard that they could pass into it without further preparation.

All these things were filling his mind more and more as his work for the College increased, and Matthew Arnold's earnest call to Liverpool in 1882: 'Organise your Secondary Education,' though it might have seemed to Mr. Arnold during his lifetime to have fallen on deaf ears, had really left behind in one mind at least, seeds which were maturing rapidly now, and which were in the next few years to ripen to harvest.

It was not, however, until 1899, four years later, that James entered the City Council and began his work for secondary education, which occupied him so continuously during the next few years. As he dwelt upon these great needs he gradually, though not all at once, laid aside his desire for a political career, and gave his whole mind and strength when at last he entered the City Council, to the development of education in his own beloved city.

To University College he gave more and more of his interest, and thought and time, and in June, 1896, he received a letter from Mr. Muspratt, President of the Council, thanking him on behalf of the Council of the College for his great personal services rendered to the College.

In the year 1896 James was again constantly away over one Parliamentary Bill after another, and on another deputation over Continuous Sittings, and in March he wrote to me: 'I am so busy I hardly know where to turn or what to begin with next.' He was often at the House of Commons, and saw a great deal of Mr. Jesse Collings and Mr. Warr, and in the summer of 1896 we joined Mr. and Mrs. Warr and a good many other friends at Camfer in the St. Moritz valley of the Engadine.

In the autumn of 1896 James became President for

the second time of the Birkenhead Literary and Scientific Society, and in October read his Presidential Address on 'International Arbitration.'

The year ended very tragically and sadly for him in the death of his dear friend Edgar Holland, which left a great blank in his life, and as the year came to a close he passed through a very trying time.

Through the following spring, James had again a huge law case which took him away constantly and lasted many months, and he was busy too in Committee over the Liverpool Dock Board Bill, and constantly in the House of Commons; and Mr. Squarey and many other friends were up about the same Bill. On May 26th, James wrote: 'We are to have a tremendous fight over the Dock Board Bill to-morrow, and I am working my hardest with some doubt of the result. The division will take place about 3 or 4, and I shall come home by the 5.30 train as usual. Last night I dined again with Bigham, and we had a jolly evening. Then I went down to the House and walked on the Terrace with Warr, it was a lovely night.'

On June 22nd, 1897, the day of Queen Victoria's Diamond Jubilee, James's name appeared in the list of new J.P's. for Liverpool.

In the early days of the following year, 1898, he had his interest in the Unionist cause again very keenly aroused, through a great Unionist gathering in Liverpool, when Mr. and Mrs. Chamberlain visited the city and great entertainments were held. I was away at the time, and James wrote enthusiastically describing Mr. Chamberlain's inspiring speech at a magnificent banquet in the Philharmonic Hall, which he said looked even more beautiful than at a banquet given some months earlier to the Colonial Premiers, and 100 more present.

University College was at this time facing a great change. Principal Rendall was leaving to take up

his Headmastership of Charterhouse School and many alterations and changes were taking place, and the time when Principal Glazebrook was taking up his new office, was an anxious and busy one for all those actively interested in the College.

In the months that followed the Unionist gathering in Liverpool, James was again seriously considering Parliament, and both Mr. Jesse Collings and Mr. Warr were now urging him strongly to it; and the question which was in his mind was, whether, if he went into Parliament, he might not only be able to do much for education but at the same time be able to serve the Unionist cause?

In April he had a constituency offered him, and he went up to London to meet by appointment the Unionist Secretary for the Midlands and also a representative from the constituency itself, but though at first it seemed promising, both James and Mr. Warr came to the conclusion in the end that it was not suitable, and James gave it up. Really the educational interests in his own city were drawing him too strongly, and though he might and certainly hoped to do much for education if he entered Parliament, he was realising that in all probability he would be able to do far better work in Liverpool itself, and so he came slowly and decidedly during the next year to the final decision to give himself to this educational work in Liverpool, and I do not think he ever in any way regretted it.

He felt, too, and I suppose it was true, that now when at last he was in a position to go into Parliament, he was, at the age of 52, really too old to begin, and that in all probability he would never be able to win a position of *real* responsibility in the House.

These questions, however, cannot be answered.

As a speaker he had, I think, no very telling eloquence, but he spoke out of a high-toned, cultured

mind, and with an impressive quiet dignity, and was fair and just and true in what he had to say. He took large clear views of things and situations, and his judgment and his mental grasp of a subject were striking. I think his speaking arrested people; his voice too was mellow and pleasant to listen to, and he spoke good English, but it sometimes seemed to me that he kept too strong a guard over himself; he needed to let himself go; the reins were often held too tight.

In many of the letters written to me about James after he died, some of those who were, one would think, best able to judge of his powers, said: 'He had the qualities of a statesman.' He certainly was a fine administrator and had great power and wisdom in the management of men and affairs. He took large and very far reaching views, and in times of difficulty and confusion he could look across it all and with clear sight point out the real issues.

Although he was often so busy and so pressed with work and always in the thick of things, he never seemed in a hurry. He weighed things carefully and bided his time, but when a decision had to be made he was ready to make it, and those who knew him and worked with him grew to rely upon his judgment and to trust him and follow him.

In October the new Thompson Yates Laboratories at University College were opened by Lord Lister, and the night before James dined with his old friend Dr. Mitchell Banks, who was entertaining some of the great Doctors who had come for the opening.

The gathering next day was a memorable one. The ceremony was held in St. George's Hall and the Honorary Degree to Lord Lister given there, but there was a large reception later in the College and in the Laboratories themselves, where the formal opening took place.

University College was certainly growing apace, and

the next two years saw great changes not only in its growth and expansion, but also in the loss of several men who had long been associated with it, and who held very honoured places in Science and Literature. Dr. Oliver Lodge resigned in June, 1900, and just afterwards Professor Walter Raleigh accepted the Chair of English Literature at Glasgow University. A few months earlier Principal Glazebrook resigned after two years' service in order to take up a great scientific post in London, and Mr. A. W. W. Dale, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Trinity Hall, Cambridge, succeeded to the Principalship and began his great work in Liverpool.

Before Professor Walter Raleigh left Liverpool, he wrote a delightful letter to James, brimming over with affection for and delight in University College, which he left reluctantly in spite of the great position he was going to fill in the old University of Glasgow. In it he said: 'I really find it difficult to believe that the Staff at Glasgow can take the pride and pleasure in their place that we here take in the College. Here we live in a place we have made, so to say. It is a great privilege. In Glasgow I shall be like a hermit crab in a world old shell. I must try and find comfort in the thought that I shall be a fat crab. I don't dwell on the more private sense of loss, although in no other place in the world have I had so much kindness. But that falls from Heaven so to say, and I am talking politics to you as friend and Councillor. The enormous strength of the place is that it is young and growing, and that the limit of its ambitions is far off. You might have Pericles for your Principal if you could find him and convince him of that, and Plato for your Professor of Literature. I sometimes feel almost hostile towards anyone who doesn't talk impudently of the future destinies of the College.'

All these changes at University College added a

good deal to James's work and thought in connection with it, and he became more and more occupied over College affairs.

The year before this, 1899, had been a momentous one for him. In February his mother died, leaving us both terribly desolate, and we had the saddest spring, dismantling the home which had for so long held our dear treasure.

In November of the same year, 1899, James stood for the City Council in Liverpool, and had a hot fight, but was returned for 'Wavertree West' by a good majority. This was a Unionist gain, which was satisfactory. But to be a member for this ward added considerably to his activities. It was a long way from his home, and it was a working-man's ward and an enthusiastic one, too, and though James very much enjoyed the contact with these new constituents, with many of whom he formed warm friendships, at the end of his heavy day's work it was a big undertaking to go out to Wavertree and travel back on cold winter nights to Oxton. He took many severe colds in consequence, and was often far too tired on reaching home. I remember the correspondence too, which grew as the time went on and they learnt to know him better and wrote confidentially to him, not only about politics and the needs of the ward, but about their joys and their sorrows too. It was a real and deep interest to him to be so taken into their lives, but it was a big addition to his work.

Here, at the beginning of the new century 1900, James very seriously took up public work, fully intending that it should occupy more and more of his time, and that his professional work should gradually grow less as the years went by, but though it did gradually grow less he kept to the end some of his personal clients, who were loath to let him go, and some of his most devoted public clients also.

James was greatly attached to his partners, and was on the most delightful footing of real friendship with them. In January every year up to 1920 they used to meet and dine together at our house, and I remember in these latter years, when the meeting, which was always a very jolly one, was over, he would say to me: 'What a delightful set they are: no one ever had such partners as I have.'

James loved the office and was much attached to the members of the office staff, especially those who had been there many years, and I think he was greatly looked up to by all. He took a very special interest in those who worked in their leisure to make themselves more competent and widen their powers of usefulness, and he took a tremendous interest in one or two clerks who, like himself, took up and pursued through many years the study of German. James always welcomed warmly any personal effort in anyone, made towards a better and wider education of any kind, and I often noticed that his own special clerks who helped him in his room generally developed some real interest in Literature or some other study of some kind. No one, I think, could ever be close beside him at all, for any length of time, without feeling, perhaps unconsciously sometimes, a desire to know and do more.

All through 1899 great discussions had been going on over University College. In every direction it had grown enormously, and it had reached a stage when the old Charter, granted nearly 20 years before, needed revision owing to the enlarged and altered condition of things which now prevailed, and in 1900 an application was made for a *Supplemental Charter* to enable a fuller and wider representation to be made on the Council of the College and also in its Court of Governors, and to give the College increased powers of self-government. On January 22nd, 1900, the Supplemental Charter was granted. This was a

great preparatory step towards the fuller freedom and towards the great change into a self-governing University which followed so rapidly afterwards.

In all these discussions that went on about the College, and a little later about the coming University, James was most intimately associated, and those most interested in the College welfare came continually to discuss things with him, before his final draughting of the Supplemental Charter, and always afterwards through the greater changes that followed. I remember how first one came to our house and then another, bringing their suggestions and views and asking James's views also, and discussing the whole question of the coming University often into the late hours of the night.

Professor Mackay, how often he came, and oftener and oftener as the time went on towards the draughting of the Charter for the University itself. How they talked and talked and sometimes how they fought. Professor Mackay so brilliant, so effervescing with ideas, but sometimes so difficult. So eager for a democratic University open to all and serving all, but when it came to the government of the business of the University, wanting power vested in the Academic Staff and not merely power over academic questions. To this James could never agree, but kept tight hold of the reins, determined that when a University came it should be no place for one sided government, but a University founded on the broadest lines of democracy, serving the city and with scholarship kept at the highest possible level, but the city itself serving it and its great business men sharing in its government.

James's work for the College and for the coming University was continuous, but he was carried along by a great determination and by an immense enthusiasm, a determination and an enthusiasm which had their roots away in the days of the past, when he had found his

city without a University at a time when he had so greatly needed the help of one.

Of his work for the University when the time was ripe, I will not attempt to say much. It was written in the hearts of those who worked for it with him. He spared himself not at all in the great fight. He held back with a firm hand, in the years that went before, those who would as he thought, have begun too soon, but all the time he was thinking, learning, planning the way by which the great step could be reached, and when the right moment came he was ready to throw himself wholeheartedly into the effort to bring about this great change.

His ideals were distinct and strong ; they were not always acceptable to a few of the College staff. He saw a new position for the modern University, not managed on academic lines only but on broad business lines too. A University springing up in a great centre of commerce in touch with the city's needs, helping, strengthening, raising, idealising the work going forward in the city, and the city men themselves active and interested in the conduct of the business of the University.

He saw the widening influence of the business life of the city touching the academic life, and the ideals of the academic life and learning raising and improving the business methods and ideals of the city. But these were two elements still far apart and it was this human welding of the two which, it seemed to him, *must* form the strength of the modern University.

To carry out these ideals, to keep the academic learning in its high place and yet bend it to the city's needs and bring to its use the great business capacity of the city, these were at that time new ideals which needed a force taking part in both and knowing both to weld them into one, and the doubt and reluctance

of both to approach each other was at first and perhaps ever will be a difficulty.

There was in James, I think, here, something of the statesman. He was a strong guide. He saw the big currents of new need and of new thought. He bided his time, watching, thinking, planning, and for ever discussing with those about him, the great questions on hand; but when the moment came for ripe action, he went forward with a steady quiet lead, no longer holding back but pressing on to the goal. I think that all who knew, recognised the great part he took in the making and in the getting of the Charter of the University.

Sir John Brunner and James were Chairman and Vice-Chairman of the Parliamentary and Charter Sub-Committee, and James, as Vice-Chairman, finally draughted the Charter, after constant consultation with Council and Senate of University College.

During the last years before the University came into being, James and Principal Dale met almost daily and sometimes many times a day, and gradually together worked into shape the main outlines of the Charter by which the University was to be governed, the principles of which had been laid down in long discussions with those most interested and responsible among the officers and members of the Council and Senate of the College.

All through 1902 and during the first half of 1903, the preparations for the getting of the Charter for the University occupied a very large part of James's time and thought, and he was constantly in London over it, and also over the Education Bill then before Parliament and other Railway Bills in connection with his professional work; and during these constant absences from home I have many letters from him, extracts from which give some idea of the volume and variety of his work just then.

On February 28th, 1902, he wrote: 'This morning

I went down to Mr. Pritchard and with him to Lord Morley, with whom we had a very satisfactory interview, getting all our own way. I lunched with Sir John Brunner at the Reform Club and afterwards went with him to the House of Commons, and spent over two hours alone with Brunner going through the different questions in connection with the Charter. It was pleasant to find that we entirely agreed on all points. To-night I am going to the House again to dine with Warr and perhaps hear the debates, Brunner is to join us at dinner. The arrangements for to-morrow are unchanged: Dale is coming up by the morning train. I must now go to the hotel and try to get a short rest before I go to the House again.'

On May 12th, 1902, he wrote after reaching London: 'I am just off to Westminster, where I hope to get a cup of tea and see Mr. Pritchard before I go to the consultation. I see Dale has a room here and also Pickmere, the Town Clerk. I return to Liverpool by the 10.15 to-morrow morning, reaching Liverpool at 2.35, and the College Council is at 3.'

On June 12th, he writes from London again: 'I was kept late at the City Council in Liverpool yesterday over the Education Bill and only reached London at 9.15, meeting many friends on the way. I have been in the House of Lords Committee room all day till 3 o'clock, but our Bill was not reached; however, I expect it will come on about 11 to-morrow and will certainly be finished to-morrow. I am tired and having a quiet evening here to-night.'

On July 10th, 1902, I was at Harrow, and he wrote from Liverpool: 'The Executive Committee passed the statutes of the University to-day, without much alteration,' and on July 11th: 'Warr writes this morning that he hears from Haldane that the hearing of our Petition for the Charter will not take

place till October. I am not surprised at this as I think the Government have their hands full with the Education Bill. The delay is inconvenient in some ways but it will relieve me of a little pressure.'

On the 19th November he was in London again over University business and many other things besides, and wrote: 'After lunch I shall have to meet Agents and Counsel and University people for the rest of the afternoon.'

On December 16th, 1902, he went up to London with Principal Dale, and also with a client on other important business, and he writes: 'I drove straight on arriving to a business appointment with my client and afterwards to the consultation over the University, which lasted an hour. Dale and I are now ready for the fray to-morrow. Our Counsel are not quite so confident to-day, which is a good sign.'

This was the great Petition for the Charter incorporating a University in Liverpool, which was brought before the Privy Council on December 17th, 1902, and which was followed by a similar Petition for an independent University in Manchester, and opposed by Leeds University College, which still wished to remain a part of the Victoria University.

The Petitions were heard by:

The Right Honourable Lord President of the
Privy Council (The Duke of Devonshire)

The Right Honourable the Earl of Rosebery

The Right Honourable Lord Balfour of Burleigh

The Right Honourable Lord James of Hereford

The Right Honourable Sir Edward Fry.

A great array of leading Counsel also were present. Not only Liverpool, Manchester, and Leeds were fully represented by leading Counsel and other Counsel associated with them, but also Victoria University, Dissident Graduates, and Leeds City and the

Ridings of Yorkshire, were each separately represented. It was an impressive and great assembly.

Mr. Haldane was at first secured as leading Counsel for the Liverpool case, and his advice and assistance proved invaluable, but his elevation to the Privy Council precluded him from appearing before that Tribunal, and the Hon. Alfred Lyttleton, K.C., M.P., took his place, with Mr. Sidney Webb and Mr. John Kemp associated with him.

Mr. Haldane however was able to give most valuable help as a witness, and with Principal Dale gave evidence on behalf of the College.

On December 17th, James wrote: 'We had our first sitting to-day. Lyttleton put our case fairly well but made one or two mistakes in tactics. Dale made an admirable witness and so did Haldane. But the Committee seemed nearly all against us in the morning, and I am afraid they are not yet converted, though they seemed a little more favourable this afternoon. We are to continue to-morrow and probably on Friday. We are not therefore very cheerful to-night, though I have not given up hope. Dale and I spend much time in our sitting-room.'

Next day, however, was more cheering and he wrote: 'We have had a better day with the University to-day. Mr. Haldane completed his evidence in our favour and the Manchester case was taken and came out very well for us. The case of our opponents, the Yorkshire College was then begun and will be continued to-morrow. I suppose we shall finish then somehow, though I cannot imagine how all the speeches and evidence can be got through in a day. However the Tribunal will not sit on a Saturday, and if we don't finish to-morrow we shall go over to the new year. The best thing to-day was that the noble Lords seemed to have formed a favourable opinion of our case, so far as we could judge by their occasional remarks. But

I think Sir Edward Fry and perhaps Lord James are still against us. It is getting extremely interesting and you will be able to follow it in the *Daily Post*, which I am told has a good account of the proceedings. I have just had a long tea and smoke in the sitting-room with Dale, Oulton, Burgess, Gonner, Boyce and Mackay. They are full of suggestions which have to be considered, and every moment until late at night seems occupied either with the case or with other correspondence. I expect to be at home to-morrow, but I find that my speech at the Town Hall is to-morrow, not Monday evening.'

He returned home in excellent spirits, having greatly enjoyed the fight and hoping for the best. In the New Year he was again constantly in London, and very busy in February over preparations for the new Education Committee which was being formed in Liverpool, and indeed in every direction was working at top speed and in the best of spirits. On February 16th he wrote to me at Harrow: 'Stevens, I am sorry to say, is laid up with Influenza, but Crooks and I are as well as horses and will meet the clients, every Jack man of them.'

On February 17th, he wrote in the highest spirits: 'We have had good news of the University this morning. We had a letter from the Privy Council communicating their decision and you will find it in to-day's *Times*. It is very satisfactory: the conditions which are imposed are what we have always contemplated, though the Privy Council want us to go into greater detail than we had intended. The only drawback is that Leeds is to have an opportunity of applying for a Charter for Yorkshire before ours is granted, and this, I fear will delay us, perhaps for a year. However it was quite possible we might have had to wait much longer.'

Everybody here is delighted, and we are exchanging congratulations all round. Brunner sent me a kind

telegram and Oulton rang me up specially ; indeed every one is very kind indeed. We are to have a meeting of the Charter Committee to-morrow, but I do not think that I shall need to go to London specially about this matter at present. I am sending you a paper with the Education discussion yesterday ; you may like to look through it.'

The following day, February 18th, he wrote again about the University. 'We are still talking about the University. I had a nice letter from Gonner and another from Hopkinson, who wants to see me.

'The Lord Mayor turned up at our Charter Committee this afternoon and took a very active part in the proceedings. Brunner wants me to dine and sleep at his house next Wednesday to discuss University matters, but I shall, I think, be in London.'

On February 20th he wrote : 'I have had a very heavy day and an afternoon at Manchester in the middle of it. I had a satisfactory interview with Hopkinson and expect to meet him in London next week : he is as anxious as we are to push on, and I hope we shall get Leeds into line.'

On February 25th, he again wrote from London : 'I had a comfortable journey : Dale travelled with me. We are going down to the House to-night to see Haldane at 11, which is the hour he has fixed, but I hope I may get to bed by 12, I am quite expecting to go to Harrow Weald to-morrow evening, and I expect Oulton here to-morrow, and shall then have to talk about the Education Committee.'

On the following day he wrote : 'I have just lunched with Sir John Brunner and told him all about the University, and before I go to my next appointment I sit down to talk with you. Dale and I had a pleasant and very satisfactory interview with Haldane last night. He spoke to us very freely and confidentially of the position, which is really even more favourable than

appeared. He has explained what the Privy Council really wish and how we can best meet these wishes. If we bestir ourselves there will not be much delay. We are *not* to be kept waiting for Leeds, and it is still possible we may get the whole thing through during the present session. The knowledge will help me very much at the interview with the Clerk of the Privy Council which Hopkinson and I are to have to-morrow afternoon.

I have had a pretty long morning's work with Mr. Cottrell and Mr. Pritchard over our Railway Bills and must now return to the same business. At 4 o'clock I attend a meeting of the Directors of the White Cross Co., and as soon as possible afterwards I shall go out to Harrow Weald.'

On the following day, February 27th, he wrote: 'It is past 7 and I am only just back from the House of Commons where I and seven or eight others have been waiting for the Attorney General. He had to postpone us after all and we are to see him to-morrow morning. I have had a great day to-day about the University, and we have pushed on the Charter several steps. Leeds is going to concur with us in helping matters along, and the Privy Council authorities are most anxious to help. After all, I think we shall have the University and the Act of Parliament *this* Session. Dale is returning to Liverpool, but Warr and Hopkinson and Boddington are still staying. I shall return to-morrow.'

On *March 16th* he was again in London, and wrote: 'I have just had a satisfactory talk with Haldane, and everything else has gone well, and I have practically nothing more to do except attend the Conference to-morrow.'

On *April 6th* he wrote from London again: 'I have been extremely busy ever since I arrived in London. I had to go down to Mr. Pritchard's

unexpectedly as he is going out of town to-morrow, then I went to Chancery Lane for a meeting which lasted three hours, and then went back to the Metropole Hotel, where I met another gentleman on business. I am to meet Hopkinson at the Privy Council office at 3 to-morrow, so I shall not be able to return until late.'

On April 28th he wrote again from London: 'It is nearly half past seven and I am not going to do any more work until nine, and in the interval am writing to you, after which I shall dine and have a short rest. I had a heavy day in Liverpool yesterday and did not get off until 6.15 train for London, but I travelled comfortably. To-day I have been at consultations all day over our Railway Bills, preparing for the fray to-morrow.'

On the following day he wrote: 'We have had our first day of the fray and it has gone off well on the whole. We had some discouragements at first, but as the day went on we did better and indeed as well as could reasonably be expected. Crooks is up helping me, which is of the greatest advantage and comfort; he will have to go down to-morrow night as Stevens is coming up to London to-morrow on another case. My big Assize case is in the meantime settled, so I have nothing but this Bill on my hands, but I don't expect we shall finish this week. I intend to return to Birkenhead on Friday in any case, even if I have to return on Sunday night, which is probable.'

The following day he wrote: 'We have just completed our second day and it has passed off well, better than I expected, but we shall not finish to-morrow, but another day next week ought to suffice. To-night I have a great treat in store. Mr. John Lea has invited me to his annual dinner to the artists. I am told that it is the most delightful function and that I shall meet many of the great artists.'

On May 4th he was again in London, and wrote : ' We had a hard fight over the Railway Bill and did not finish until after 3. The Committee decided in our favour, laying down some conditions which are not at all onerous. We have to go before them again to-morrow morning to settle the wording of the clauses and then *that* part of my work will be over. I have also been to the Privy Council and seen Mr. Fitzroy, who was extremely polite and glad to see me, and I made some progress with him in settling the remaining points of the Charter. I found him reading my speech of Saturday from *The Times*. I have some other people to see here, but am glad to have got through the great and anxious part of my work.'

In March, 1903, three months before the actual granting of the Charter for the new University, James read a paper before the Birkenhead Literary and Scientific Society on 'A new University.' In it he called attention to Matthew Arnold as having, so far back as 1859, appealed for the very improvements in Secondary Education and in University Education which were now being realised and accepted as necessary. He traced the ideas of the Modern University and appealed for support for the coming Liverpool University from other Municipalities outside Liverpool who would share its benefits, and he pointed out how the Act of Parliament which had been granted to the Liverpool City Council at their own special request, to enable them to lay a penny rate in support of the University, gave the same powers also to *every* local Education Authority ; and he appealed to those other Authorities under its sphere of influence, to help in supporting the University also, and to see that by a graduated system of Municipal Scholarships adequate in number and value, it should be made possible for their children,

who were able to profit by it, to obtain that higher education.

In 1899 James first took his seat in the City Council. It was not however until April 8th, 1903, and some few months after the passing of the 'Education Act' that the first meeting of the new Education Authority took place, at which meeting James was elected Deputy-Chairman of the Education Committee and Chairman of the Secondary Education Sub-Committee.

He now began very seriously to consider how Secondary Education in the City could be raised onto a higher plane and the number of schools increased to meet the rising need.

Under the old School Board Elementary Education had been well seen after, but the Secondary Schools in the city were few and far between, and the standard of learning in each varied greatly. It was not possible for even the highest of these scholars to pass from the School into the University, they had to seek other help first in order to pass the Matriculation examination which was required before entering as a University student.

To bring Secondary Education in the city up to this Matriculation standard or something equivalent to it and to increase the number of Secondary Schools and bring them under the control of the city and raise them to a higher and more uniform standard of learning was the work which James with other members of the Secondary Education Sub-Committee set out to accomplish in 1903. Their aims were not only to make it possible for Secondary School scholars to reach so high a standard as to pass straight into the University, but also by more City Scholarships for boys and girls who were able to win them to make it possible for them to pass from the Elementary Schools into the Secondary Schools, and also by other Scholarships, at a later stage, to pass into the University.

The difficulties on every side were immense. The transformation of schools already existing and working under various foundation agreements made things difficult of approach and complicated to the last degree.

The Government, too, was working out the new problem in the country at large, and was faced by fresh difficulties in almost every city.

It was at this crisis that Mr. Michael Sadler began his Reports on the state of Secondary Education in special cities, and to give his recommendations at the same time for solving the difficulties under the special conditions present in each city, suggesting ways and means by which the standard of Secondary Education could be raised, and recommending the number of new schools required to meet the increasing demand in each city. Having come so lately from the Education office itself, he was armed with a knowledge of what the Government was really proposing and ready to do to help the establishment of this new extension of Secondary Education everywhere.

On July 8th James wrote from London: 'I have been to South Kensington to-day and had a most interesting and instructive interview with Mr. Bruce. He entered sympathetically into the Liverpool Institute scheme and made some good suggestions. He also approved of my suggestion for an enquiry into the general condition of Secondary Education in Liverpool, and he himself suggested Mr. Sadler. I also discussed with him the question of a Director for Liverpool. So we went over a great deal of ground and he seemed as interested as I was. I should now like to follow up the matter by seeing Sadler, but he lives at Weybridge and I don't know when to get time to see him.'

On July 9th he wrote again: 'I have written to Mr. Sadler to-day asking for an interview. I quite hope

we may get him to undertake the enquiry in Liverpool, it would be of enormous advantage if he can.'

Mr. Sadler, however, was extremely busy, and for some time it seemed impossible to arrange a meeting, but they met at last, and it was informally arranged that in the following March Mr. Sadler would be able to undertake the enquiry if he were formally asked to do so and the arrangements were satisfactory.

On October 22nd, 1903, at the Education Committee, it was passed on the recommendation of the Secondary Education Sub-Committee, that Mr. Michael Sadler should be invited to report as to the present condition and the best means of extending and improving secondary education (including the training of teachers) in the City of Liverpool, in its relation to primary education on the one hand and University education on the other.

In this same busy month of October James found time to give an Address on "Thrift" at the Y.M.C.A., Birkenhead, at one of their Citizen Socials, and a year or two before this he was at a similar gathering and addressed them on 'Civic Patriotism.'

This year 1903 was a memorable one in Liverpool. Not only did the new Education Authority start its work, but the Charter was granted for the new University of Liverpool.

On August 5th the first meeting of the Council of the University took place, and on November 5th was held the first University Court of Governors. At the first Council Meeting of the University the Charter was laid upon the Table, and the Chancellor, the Earl of Derby, addressed the Council, and afterwards Mr. E. K. Muspratt was appointed President, and *James, Vice-President of the Council of the new University.*

Many warm letters of congratulation came to James on his appointment as Vice-President, and a very hearty one from Professor Gonner, who wrote :

‘I was delighted at your election as Vice-President of the Council—the more so as it was unexpected. Knowing you were anxious that someone else should hold the position, I was surprised though pleased to find that you were not to have your own way. It is a very excellent thing for the new University and very many will join with me in thinking that your position will add much to our strength and stability.’

On August 5th, Lord Derby wrote at a late hour from the House of Lords :

‘DEAR MR. ALSOP,

We have just read the University of Liverpool Bill the third time. So there is only the Royal Assent to be awaited and that is a matter of course.

I am very glad to be of any use, and was much obliged for your agent’s visit to me.

Yours very truly,

DERBY.’

This was the Act which dissolved the University College and transferred its Staff, property and endowments to the University.

Before the close of this memorable year 1903, there came to James a gift which I think he valued more almost than anything that had come to him before. It came from the Members of Senate of the University, and was accompanied by a letter from Vice-Chancellor Dale which he treasured as one of his most valued possessions.

The letter ran thus :

‘Ullet Road,

Liverpool.

5 December, 1903.

MY DEAR ALSOP,

On behalf of the Senate may I ask you to accept the examples from Turner’s “*Liber Studiorum*” which should reach you at the same time as this letter ?

Any adequate recognition of the help that you have given us individually and collectively for many years past, and of your

unfailing kindness, is impossible. But these pictures when you look at them may remind you of that common service in which we hope that you may be long associated with us, and of that personal friendship which brightens and sweetens even the drudgery of work.

Believe me, my dear Alsop, ever

Very truly yours,

A. W. W. DALE.'

I remember still how, when James found this letter and the beautiful gift waiting for him at home, when he returned from London, he sat reading the letter again and again in a great silence, long after the dinner bell had rung, and how he passed it on to me to read, quite unable to speak.

On December 8th, he wrote :

MY DEAR DALE,

I am simply overwhelmed by the kindness of your letter, and do not know how to express to you and the other Members of the Senate my gratitude for this most beautiful gift.

It has been one of the greatest joys and privileges of my life to have been associated with the members of the Senate in this great work, though my own part has been but a small one ; and I appreciate more deeply than I can say this signal mark of kindness on the part of those whom I hope I may always call my comrades and with whom I trust I may be long permitted to do a share of work.

Please convey to each and all of the members of the Senate my warm thanks, and

Believe me, my dear Dale,

Always yours faithfully,

JAMES W. ALSOP.'

This was in December, 1903, and on February 1st, 1904, Vice-Chancellor Dale again wrote to him :

Secretaries :

Rubert Boyce	' Liverpool University Committee Office,
A. W. W. Dale	University College.
W. E. Willink	1 February, 1904.

MY DEAR ALSOP,

At a meeting of the Executive Committee held on Friday, 29th January, 1904, your letter addressed to me on the 17th January, 1902,

was read, and on the motion of the Chairman it was unanimously agreed :

That the thanks of the Executive Committee be presented to Mr. James Willcox Alsop for his valuable aid most generously given in securing a University Charter and in carrying through a University Act.

The resolution is an inadequate expression of a great and enduring debt.

Believe me,

Yours very truly,

A. W. W. DALE.'

It was a curious coincidence that one of the first changes that took place in Secondary Education in Liverpool at this time was the offer made by the Directors of the Liverpool Institute, Mount Street (James's old school) to transfer that Institution to the City. On November 18th, 1903, James proposed at the Education Committee that the Report on the offer made, should be submitted to the Council, and the Council be recommended to authorise the Education Committee to accept the offer on the terms set forth, which was carried out before the close of the year.

In the following March, 1904, Mr. H. V. Weisse was appointed Head Master of the School in place of Mr. W. C. Fletcher who had resigned.

Mr. Sadler started his enquiry early in 1904, which extended over many months, and during that time James also worked incessantly over the same thing, going into every department of the enquiry with Professor Sadler and discussing and largely working out the general problem with him. Professor Sadler came to the difficulties with a fresh and vigorous mind, and his energy in getting a general view and grasp of the whole position filled everyone concerned with admiration and courage, and when the enquiry was finished, the Report and recommendations were awaited with increasing hope and reliance, but this Report was not likely to be published until the end of the year.

In July the University held its first great Degree Ceremony in St. George's Hall, at which the Chancellor, the Earl of Derby, received the first Honorary Degree of Doctor of Laws given by the University of Liverpool. There was also a long list of graduates to receive their Degrees, as in addition to the 97 undergraduates of the year, 286 Liverpool graduates of the Victoria University were received into the Liverpool University itself, as had been arranged for in the new Charter.

When the first six busy months of the year were ended, James turned his thoughts to a real holiday and arranged to go away for six weeks. In the midst of planning it out, we met at a garden party the Rev. Wm. Watson, at whose church for several years we had had sittings. James asked him if he would come with us, and he readily agreed and we started a week or two later.

This event bore many fruits. The holiday proved an extremely interesting one and was greatly enjoyed by each one of us, and it left Mr. Watson our life long friend.

James planned out the holiday most carefully and with the greatest joy, so that we might have the interests of cities at the beginning and enjoy great art treasures and music, and afterwards spend several weeks in the very heart of the Dolomites, enjoying a thorough mountain life walking and driving from one lovely valley to another and spending a quiet week or two at the edge of the pine woods beyond Cortina. We also took Bayreuth on our way there, hearing *Tannhäuser* and *Parsifal* at the Wagner Festival and afterwards a great performance of 'The Meistersingers' at the new Opera House at Munich. Bayreuth was new to us all, *Parsifal* was new to us all, and this experience was deeply impressive.

There is, perhaps, nothing more delightful than enjoying beautiful things with others who enjoy them

too, and having time and leisure to talk about them afterwards. I remember how Mr. Watson was struck by the beautiful plans James had made, and the surprises which unfolded themselves as we went along.

James was a wonderful traveller and infected everyone with the immense pleasure he took himself in the actual travel and in the variety of interests that came along. He loved planning and carrying out all the arrangements, but he would do no packing except the book-bag.

When we reached the mountains we began reading aloud, and Mr. Watson learned to do, as we always did on our holidays, bring a little book of poetry in his pocket and read some treasure from it as we sat on the mountain side. Sometimes James would read, sometimes Mr. Watson, and Keats became our favourite poet on that holiday, though from 'The Open Road,' which was always found in James's pocket, the poems of many another poet were read. The lovely scenes around us became woven into the very web of these poems. We had much fun, too, by the way, Mr. Watson enjoying the thousand and one little incidents of the road as much as we did.

I remember the interesting talks they had on the history of religious thought down through the ages, and I remember the surprise on Mr. Watson's part at the great knowledge which James possessed. He knew so much about the long religious controversies in Scotland and the positions taken up by the various divisions in the Scottish Church, and was so intensely interested in them, and indeed James had a wide and very interested knowledge of the religious views held by very different peoples all over the world.

In six weeks we were back in England, and I know we both felt we had not only gained a wonderful friend in Mr. Watson, but that he had somehow drawn us into a more religious and spiritual atmosphere

and made God seem more vital and real than before. There was that in Mr. Watson which made you feel the constant joyful restful presence of God in his life, though he never spoke of it, and he had a quiet spiritual influence which drew those about him into its light.

During the time abroad, James and Mr. Watson had had many long walks and talks together, and James had come to have a deep affection for him, and in the years which were to follow this friendship grew into one of very close intimacy.

In the autumn after our return Mr. Watson asked James if we could not both become members of his church and join in the Communion Service, and we most gladly joined, and I remember the happiness it brought to us both.

In writing to us later that he had placed our names on the roll, Mr. Watson said: 'I do hope that in such ministrations as are carried on in Trinity Church you will find such help and cheer as will make life a pleasant road, and all the gracious kindly things one can do in it and all the sad things one has sometimes to suffer in it, steps on those altar stairs that slope between us and God.'

CHAPTER IV

1904-1911

IN the autumn of 1904, Mr. Sadler's Report was published, and had an enthusiastic reception not only in Liverpool but throughout the country.

Already the regeneration of Secondary Education in Liverpool had set in. Steps had been taken in preparation for the handing over of the Institute and Blackburne House Schools and the School of Art to the city, with all their endowments and scholarships : a splendid gift. Each school, however, was to retain its own Management Committee, but a Committee responsible to the Education Committee and having among its members representatives both of the Education Committee and the University. The actual transfer did not take place until March, 1905, but Mr. Weisse, the new Head Master, who was to exercise so great an influence over the school in the future, arrived in March of the previous year.

When Mr. Sadler's Report was published, James, as Chairman of the Secondary Schools Committee and Vice-Chairman of the Education Committee, was already hard at work making ready the ground for the new planting.

The Report, with its wide survey over the whole field of Secondary Education as it then existed, and accompanied by illuminating suggestions for working out reforms and improvements, without making any clear sweep of existing schools where any chance of reorganising was possible, gave an immense help and

impetus to those who were already grappling with the difficulties of the situation.

To James and his Secondary Sub-Committee, who at a later time were facing the more difficult problem of the Collegiate School, suggestions made by Mr. Sadler very greatly helped in solving that difficulty, though it needed long and very delicate handling and much patience and judgment to bring about the final arrangements, and set the school on its present fine and free foundation as a City School, with Mr. Brown its great Head Master to bring it up to its high position.

Both Mr. Weisse and Mr. Brown were men of the widest culture, keen for the highest scholarship, but keener still for the highest standard of character and conduct in the school, and both believers in the cultivation in their boys of the love of the beautiful. As time went on, each brought music very closely into the life of the school, Mr. Weisse, by having the best music for the boys to listen to and doing all he could to arouse and foster a real appreciation of good music, and Mr. Brown by encouraging the boys themselves to become musicians, their fine orchestra and part-singing becoming a feature of very great importance in the school.

In 1901 James, being Chairman of the Technical Instruction Committee in the City Council, became *ex-officio* member of the Liverpool 'Council of Education'; in 1903 he became President of the 'Council of Education' and continued to hold the position in 1904 and 1905.

In January, 1905 the 'Council of Education' at their Annual Meeting referred to the transfer of its administrative work to the offices of the Liverpool Education Committee and announced that the meetings in future were to be held in the Education Offices and that the Council, relieved now from the

necessity of maintaining its own separate offices, was free to devote the whole of its funds to educational work.

On February 28th Professor Sadler was invited to deliver the Scholarships and Awards given by the Council of Education and to give an address on Educational topics. The Meeting was held in the University, and Professor Sadler again urged the raising of all Secondary Schools in the city on to a higher plane of intellectual efficiency, and the raising of the teaching staff in the schools. In the evening the Lord Mayor gave a banquet at the Town Hall in honour of Mr. Sadler and also the Council of Education.

In these busy months when the University and the Education Committee were both taking up much of James's time and thought, Mr. Oulton fell ill and James had the Chairmanship of the Education Committee also on his shoulders. In April he had the Education Estimates to see through the Council, and in July the University Grant, and all the time a continual stream of various educational and other questions coming up for solution.

On March 12th, 1905 James wrote a letter to the *Daily Post* correcting a rather prevalent opinion that the Institute had already been transferred to the city, and giving an interesting account of the negotiations with the Board of Education and also with the Charity Commissioners, which, he stated, were at last almost completed. He said that when this was done, it would be necessary to constitute the new governing body of the Institute, adding that he did not doubt that the local Education Authority, in conjunction with this new body, would take the earliest steps to make this great benefaction of real and lasting service to the citizens of Liverpool, and ends his letter with these words: 'In the world of

Education cheapness is not the only desideratum. Happily the Liverpool Education Committee has before it the high ideals and practical suggestions embodied in Professor Sadler's Report, and I am convinced that they will not willingly accept anything less than the best.'

In the late spring another question of a very different kind came up to be answered. Ulverscroft was to be sold, and James had the first refusal of it. We had often wished for this house, and James had always hoped some day to see his books in the library there and have space to set them out, which he no longer had at Griff.

After only a short time for decision, it was arranged he should buy Ulverscroft and come into possession on September 1st. This was a great excitement. We had been nineteen years in our first home and were devoted to it. Vice-Chancellor Dale came over to see us and told us we had made a great mistake, and that we should never find anything so nice again as Griff, but I think he thought we were right later when he saw Ulverscroft.

On James's return from Switzerland in the early autumn, the question of a Director of Education was raised in the Education Committee, and a Sub-Committee was formed to consider the subject.

In September James met his constituents at Wavertree West, who enthusiastically adopted him again as their representative at the coming municipal elections ; and it was hoped by the party that one who was working so whole-heartedly for the city's good, and was held in honour by people of all shades of politics, would not be opposed at the election, but it turned out later that the Liberals were determined to win back the seat at all costs.

When James was thrown out on November 1st, there was a tremendous outcry from every side at the

treatment he had received, and the large number of fine letters that were written about him and about the great work he was doing for the city in every branch of education, and of his high personal character, did something to alleviate the disappointment, but the upset to all his work was unfortunate and most annoying, and many things he was actively carrying forward came to a standstill.

He had also some weeks earlier been invited by Sir Charles Petrie to allow himself to be nominated as Lord Mayor for the coming year, and had been much pressed to accept, but, knowing how greatly the acceptance of this high office would be obliged to interfere with his educational work, he did not accept the honour.

We were also at this time in grave anxiety about my father, whose health had been failing for some time, and who was rapidly growing worse, and he died on November 7th after a severe operation. We were to have moved into Ulverscroft on November 11th, but this was the day of my father's funeral and the removal was postponed until a week or two later. It was a sad time all round, and a great grief to us both that my father would never come to us in our new home.

On November 29th, James's friend, Mr. J. T. Wood, formally resigned his seat in Castle Street Ward and James was adopted as candidate for the Ward, and was returned unopposed to the Council, where he was warmly welcomed back, though both he and many others greatly regretted the resignation of Mr. Wood, who had done excellent work in the Council.

James was, however, no longer Deputy-Chairman of the Education Committee, as his friend Mr. Harrison Jones (a Liberal) had been elected to fill his place. His Chairmanship of the Secondary

.

Schools Committee he kept, however, on returning to the Council.

When Christmas came we were settled down in Ulverscroft, and had a family gathering there, my mother coming to us and all her children and grandchildren gathering about her that Christmas time. It was the last time we all met together. We met under the shadow of a great loss, but the meeting and the memory of my dear father seemed to sanctify and bless our new home. I remember with what wonderful tenderness James took care of my mother that Christmas, and how the children gathered round him, always wanting Uncle James to share everything with them. By this time the books were all on the shelves at Ulverscroft, but for several years afterwards, they were constantly being arranged and re-arranged, and I see James now wandering round his library, very happy amongst his treasured books.

The drawing-room, too, was a great pleasure to him, and he called it 'The lover's room,' and said to me one day, 'Two could sit there and two there and two there and two there,' and when I inquired if they were all to be in at once, I can hear his low deep laugh as he said: 'Why shouldn't they; they wouldn't be very near?' The mysterious 'they,' they were always in his mind and he was making plans for them, sometimes in one direction, sometimes in another.

During this winter of 1906, two momentous steps were taken by the Education Committee. It was decided and passed by the Council that there should be a Director of Education in Liverpool, and also that a large new Secondary School for Girls should be built on a fine open site in Aigburth Vale, a district which greatly needed a school of this kind, carried out on the broadest lines of education, with domestic science and science departments fully equipped, and

with very high-class teachers, able and ready to prepare girls for the necessary entrance qualifications for the University.

On March 24th, 1906, Mr. Augustine Birrell, the new Minister of Education, came down from London to address the Council of Education and distribute the Scholarships and prizes given by the Council to the successful scholars from the Elementary and Secondary Schools in the city. He was warmly welcomed to his native city, and a large and interested audience awaited him in the Central Hall. The Lord Mayor entertained him at luncheon and had the Council of Education and many others interested in education to meet him, and in the evening Mr. Birrell was entertained at a banquet by the University. He was James's guest and we had hoped to have him with us for a greater part of the following day, but he was called back to London for a Cabinet Council and had to leave for London that night. James, however, brought him back to Ulverscroft for an hour or two in the afternoon, and they met again in the house which had been so familiar to them both in the early days of their friendship.

James received many letters of congratulation on the success of the meeting and on having persuaded Mr. Birrell to address them, and high hopes were entertained that with Mr. Birrell as Minister of Education much would be done by the Government to help the development of education in many directions. Mr. Macnaughton wrote to James: 'Mr. Birrell's speech was most statesmanlike. He looks and talks so like Thackeray, pouring good-natured ridicule on prejudice and humbug and yet in a manner that it is impossible (even for the humbugs) to resent it. He forgets nothing important, and seems to have a spirit which should settle practical difficulties automatically.' Professor Sadler also wrote from

Italy: 'I have read Mr. Birrell's speeches with admiration. Nothing could have been better than the skill with which he strikes the right note and finds the right words to convey his meaning.'

It was just about this time that a scheme for a 'Board of Biblical Studies' in connection with the University began to take shape, the possibilities of which had for some time past been keenly discussed. James was greatly interested, and took from the very first an active part in these preliminary discussions and in the working out of the scheme.

In its Charters the University from its earliest College days, had been prohibited from giving theological or dogmatic teaching, but it was open to the University to give lectures in Semitic Languages, Hellenistic Greek and Ecclesiastical History, and promote the study of these subjects from a literary and scientific point of view, and at a time when everyone was seeking opportunities for better education, a great need was being felt, not only by clergymen and ministers of all denominations but by other students as well, that these subjects should be able to be studied in the University under competent teachers.

On March 30th, 1906, a large meeting was held in the Theatre of the University to inaugurate this Board of Biblical Studies, and a widely representative board was formed to carry out this important work and arrange courses of lectures on these subjects. Lord Derby presided at the meeting and became President of the Board, and James was elected one of its Vice-Presidents and spoke at the meeting, speaking with great enthusiasm of the way in which both in the past and in the present Liverpool men of very different views in politics and religion had 'shown themselves willing to co-operate in work directed towards a common end, and in a very real spirit

of tolerance, born of knowledge on the one side and of charity on the other.'

In the following October, seven months later, in the presence of a large and interested gathering, Vice-Chancellor Dale in the Chair, Bishop Gore opened the first session of the Board of Biblical Studies, and gave a fine and stimulating address, in which he expressed the keenest sympathy with the broad lines on which the Board had been formed, and hoped these lectures would really stimulate and maintain a higher level of study and bring together in the pursuit of these most important studies the student of all kinds, all professions and denominations, in the fellowship of a common search for truth.

James, who proposed the vote of thanks, said how encouraging it was to know that this scheme had 'the sympathy of his Lordship and that they were enabled to launch it with such helpful and strengthening words.'

In the spring of this same year, our friend and minister, Mr. Watson, in the midst of his very wonderful ministry, was suddenly seized with severe illness and had a slight stroke. He lay very ill for some weeks, but gradually became better, and as soon as he was able to be moved, he came with Mrs. Watson and their little girl and nurse to Ulverscroft, where they remained with us six weeks all through the beautiful June of that early summer. James procured a tent for him, and he was out in the tent in the garden a great part of every day and made a steady recovery. His little girl, Enid, was everyone's pet; she was just five and James was devoted to her. She could not write except in capital letters, but she used to draw picture stories of a very imaginative and charming kind, and often when James returned in the evening she had one of these to give him, and she devoted herself to him as all children did.

So the weeks slipped by and our dear friends became dearer to us each day. Then after six weeks they went south for a further change.

James was intensely busy all the time they were with us, and Mr. Watson, who had been used to a very busy life himself, was amazed at the variety of the work James was engaged upon and the full and busy life he led.

In August, however, we got away to the Thuringenwald and the Wagner Festival at Bayreuth, and afterwards to the Dolomites and Switzerland.

In the following October James came up for re-election in Castle Street Ward, but was re-elected without opposition, and in December Mr. Harrison Jones, who for the last year had held the Vice-Chairmanship of the Education Committee, generously retired from the position, and James returned to his old place again and took up the full work once more, but not without much sorrow of heart in having to supplant one for whom he had such strong feelings of friendship; but for the sake of the great reforms he was working out, he was ready and willing to accept this sacrifice, and indeed there was a feeling just then that the importance of his work made it very necessary that he should have the authority of this position.

All through the autumn, the huge arbitration which had gone on since May and kept James very busy and anxious all June and July, was still continuing and continued on into the following year. Before Christmas James fell ill with Influenza, and the doctors were anxious over his exhausted condition and urged him to work less. He listened to them, but said to me afterwards: 'What can I possibly leave off? I *will* try to do less, but I don't see how I can, and I feel better now.' It was difficult indeed for him to give up anything; everything seemed urgent, and though I proposed many things, I never

found anything that he was ready to give up, and when he felt better again he would not hear of it. One compromise, however, he agreed to, and that was that he would try and go out less in the evenings and we would have more friends at Ulverscroft. A little party at his own house always rested him, and he much enjoyed entertaining his friends, and, if it was possible, having some music during the evening.

After Christmas, spent at Harrow Weald Lodge for the last time, he was again hard at work over his arbitration, which was growing extremely anxious and interesting, and he was up in London over educational matters also. Towards the middle of January Mr. Isaacs, who was his leading Counsel in the arbitration, made his speech, which lasted several days and roused everyone's hopes that the case would be won in the end, but it was not so and only a compromise took place. On January 30th, James was again away over a Parliamentary Bill, which was to take him up and down to London in the next few months almost as often as the arbitration had done.

In the spring of every year there was another interest which took his attention. It was the making of the arrangements for the performance of '*The Messiah*' in St. George's Hall on Good Friday, for the very poor of Liverpool. This was one of the many beautiful things thought of and carried out by Miss Fanny Calder, and a small committee of friends helped her with the arrangements. James was one of these friends, and he took a very great interest in it. On Good Friday each year, it was a very rapt audience of strangely pathetic folk who gathered in the great Hall to hear this performance of '*The Messiah*.' We used to go with Miss Calder sometimes, and sit in a corner of one of the galleries. It was a strangely touching sight. I remember one of the soloists telling James that 'he would rather sing

to that audience than any audience he had ever sung to.'

In the early months of 1907, a tremendous effort was made in Liverpool to keep down the rapidly increasing Education Estimates for the city, and in the end they were not raised. James went up to London about that time on a deputation from the Association of Municipal Corporations to Mr. Asquith on Local Education rates, pressing the necessity of relief being given to these local rates by making increased Exchequer grants. He took a very prominent part in putting the case before Mr. Asquith and Mr. McKenna, the new Minister of Education, and was questioned closely by Mr. Asquith.

As the time drew near Easter James began to long for a holiday, and we planned to go to Torquay and spend a few days there near Mr. and Mrs. Watson. However, there was much to be done before James could get away. On March 24th he read a paper before the Birkenhead Literary Society on 'The New Education,' showing the new outlook on education generally since the passing of the Education Act in 1902, and pointing out two great changes which it effected—the widening of responsibility by the substitution of municipalities for school boards as the local education authorities, and the conferring upon these authorities for the *first* time of powers and duties in relation to *Higher* Education. It was, he said, only in the last years that they had begun seriously to consider educational aims and methods and ask themselves what kind of education ought they to give and how could they best give it.

In April, Mr. Oulton being unwell and still away, James brought the Education estimates before the City Council, which were passed and approved, and he spoke at some length on the estimates and also on the progress being made in carrying out the

recommendations of Professor Sadler, as regards Secondary Education in the City. The Liverpool Institute, he said, was now working under the new system, as a school maintained by the Council, and striking progress had been made at a moderate expenditure. Satisfactory results, both educationally and financially, had been obtained in the Council Pupil Teachers' College, Clarence Street, and the new High School for Girls, in Aigburth Vale, was now in course of erection.

The following day the *Courier* had a long article praising the manner in which the Budget had been prepared and brought forward, and supporting the Education Committee in their earnest efforts to raise Liverpool's educational status, while recognising the ratepayers' claims to consideration. Mr. Oulton also wrote an enthusiastic letter of congratulation, speaking of the fine way in which the estimates had been presented, and Vice-Chancellor Dale, who was away, wrote also with warm praise of the management and guidance of these estimates.

When these were over, we started for Torquay, and while there arranged with Mr. and Mrs. Watson that they should all come back to Ulverscroft while preparing to remove into their new house in Birkenhead.

Before April was out James had another short but delightful little change. Mr. Legge, the Director of Education, who had become a great friend, invited him to attend with him the Annual Dinner in his old College at Oxford and stay with him in the College itself. They went there together and had a most delightful time, and the actual sleeping in the College was a delight to James, who had his old dream of a University life revived once again. He strolled out by himself to the evening service at Christ Church, 'where,' he wrote me, 'the singing was extremely

beautiful, especially the Anthem "How lovely are the Messengers." "

While away, James and Mr. Legge visited Mr. McKenna in London, who promised to open the Aigburth Vale School in October.

It was amazing the large number of questions that were facing the leaders of education in Liverpool at that time, and James had a large share in them. In the University for several years past the question of the training of teachers and the lines on which the Training College should be run had been absorbing the time and thought of those most interested in education.

Commercial education also, and the Department of Commerce in the University, had been a constant subject of discussion, and the University and the Education Committee were in continual communication on these subjects, and those who, like James, were leaders in both, were appealed to constantly on the many questions that arose.

There was grave difference of opinion as to the working out of both these difficult problems, and it needed the utmost patience and tact, to listen carefully to all, and sift and consider impartially these conflicting ideas and claims, and guide things in a way that should bring the best result for education in the end. James, who had no axe to grind of his own, and whose single-minded desire for the right and best way of dealing with each question was clear, I think, to all, became a very strong leader during both these controversies. On every side people interested in these questions came to him, and wrote to him, discussing their special views with him, and it was, I think, very largely his judgment and tact, and his readiness to listen to and consider these many opposing views, that brought in the end some kind of peace and a general feeling that the best had been gathered in and upheld.

On May 1st, 1907, Mr. and Mrs. Watson and little Enid came back to us and stayed nearly five weeks. James was away in London over his Water Bill when the day of their arrival came, and wrote: 'tell our dear friends how disappointed I am not to be there to welcome them.' During this visit a sad thing happened. On May 22nd James lost his partner, Mr. Stevens, who died very suddenly as he was returning from his club to the office. This was a great shock and sorrow to James. Mr. Stevens had been articled in the office, and had been made a partner so far back as 1875, when James had been obliged to go abroad for a year after his breakdown in health and eyesight. They had been singularly united. Mr. Stevens was one of those bright, humorous kindly people who win friends wherever they go, and was greatly loved and held an honoured position in the profession. To James he was friend as well as partner; they shared many tastes in common, especially a love of music, engravings, and travel in foreign countries. Mr. Stevens was lame and was more or less cut off from country holidays, but few people knew the great European cities as he did.

Little Enid came to Ulverscroft with a regular army of Teddy bears, rabbits and animals of all kinds, and our home was reformed from its customary quiet look by groups of these delightful creatures sitting by the library fire and in nooks and corners everywhere. When James went away to London, she drew pictures of them to send him, and stuffed them into my letters to him each day. As I go through James's letters and papers now, I come across these fascinating little drawings. So in one way and another this dear little lassie stole into our hearts completely. In the quiet evenings we had much talking and reading and sometimes friends came in for music, and those weeks made so bright by Mr. Watson's returning

strength and health always remained a beautiful memory with us all. The Water Bill was the great bugbear; it was always taking James away, and it seemed as if it would never finish.

In June, 1907, the renewal of the grant of £10,000 to the University came up for approval before the City Council and some opposition was feared. Many wished the grant reduced; others wished it tied down to special objects in which they were particularly interested, and many spoke both in favour of the grant and against it; and finally an amendment was brought forward to reduce it. James, as was often his way, waited to the end, and then, welcoming the many enquiries, objections and suggestions, quietly took up each in turn and answered it, and when he sat down the amendment for the reduction of the grant was withdrawn and the £10,000 was passed unanimously. He was trusted; they knew he had the city at heart, both its City Council, its University and its ratepayers too; and when he spoke enthusiastically of the University, of its honoured position, of its great professors, and of its keen students, and of those who had already gone forth to take up positions of honour and learning, his enthusiasm and faith in this great seat of learning and its work, touched them all with a like pride.

About this time, too, the Secondary Schools of Liverpool were again widening their ranks and new schools of the new type were being formed by the Education Committee.

The trustees of the old Liverpool College in Shaw Street had sold the beautiful building and certain of its properties and equipment to the city, and the arrangements for the new Collegiate School to be run on the new lines for Secondary Education were gradually taking shape, while the College itself retired to Lodge Lane to carry on there, on the old

Church of England foundation, a high-class public day school for boys on modern lines, but now quite separate from the new City Collegiate School. It was an immensely complicated arrangement and James was anxious and busy over it through many months, but I think in June or July, 1907, the agreements were actually settled and signed at last.

The Holt School also was in contemplation, and alterations and additions were being made for it to certain unoccupied portions of the Sefton Park Schools, with a new entrance in another street. At the Holt School the system of co-education was to be carried out, and the boys and girls educated together up to the University standard.

On July 6th, 1907, we had a large garden party at Ulverscroft, a house warming to all our many friends, and on the 10th the University commemorated the 25th anniversary of the starting of the College and a great reception was held in the University Buildings. On July 12th there was an 'At Home' at the Town Hall, and a University Association Dinner in the evening in honour of the Honorary Graduates, and on the 13th the Honorary Graduation Ceremony itself took place, followed by a luncheon at University Club and a large garden party at Sir John Brunner's House later. It was a few days of great ceremonies, following each other rapidly, and of the visit to the city of many noted scientists from other countries as well as our own.

At the end of July, James had to attend a great wedding in the north of England as solicitor to the family. He was very unwell at the time, but nothing would keep him from going, as he knew it would upset the arrangements and that no one else knew things as he knew them. However, he got better as he neared his destination, and on the wedding day

went through his duties all right, but when he reached home he was in bed for a day or two.

On August 3rd Liverpool celebrated its 700th anniversary, and there was a great pageant in which all the school children in the Elementary Schools of Liverpool took part, on the 4th a Thanksgiving Service in St. George's Hall, and on the 7th a Ball at the Town Hall to the officers of the Channel Fleet then on a visit to Liverpool. On the 8th we had a party at Ulverscroft, so that the days of that summer were filled up with many varieties of entertainments in amongst his strenuous work.

It was still hoped at this time that the Aigburth Vale School would be opened by Mr. McKenna in the late autumn; but before James left for his holiday, the Minister of Education wrote regretting that this had become impossible, owing to his promise to introduce a comprehensive Education Bill in the following year, which in its preparation would seriously curtail his liberty of action in the coming autumn. This was a great disappointment to James at the time, but later, as the autumn advanced, it became certain that the school would not be ready for opening until the next year.

While we were still away in Switzerland that September, Mr. Legge (the Director) wrote to James: 'I am sure you will be pleased to hear that the Holt Secondary School opened yesterday and successfully. The total number of admissions, including free scholars, amounted at the end of this, the 2nd day, to 295. Thus there is every probability that the place will be full by the end of the week. We may even have to refuse applications next week.'

The autumn was crowded to the uttermost for James with educational work and interests, both in connection with the University and also Secondary Education. Up to Christmas, what with Prize

distributions, Law dinners at the Town Hall and the Law Society, and other Town Hall dinners and receptions and University gatherings, there seemed very few days when James was not crossing to Liverpool twice every day.

In the autumn of this year, Professor Woodward retired from his position as Professor of Education in the University and Head of the Training College, and at the dinner given to him at University Club, James was asked to propose his health. They were close friends, and through the long controversies over the Training College and the School of Commerce they came into almost daily intercourse.

On Sunday afternoons at Ulverscroft James was always delighted to see his friends. Many University and Educational friends came over and we had delightful gatherings, and after tea they would retire to the library for those intimate smokes and talks which were so long remembered afterwards, times when they seemed to learn to know James in new ways in all the fuller ease of his home. Professor and Mrs. Carey, Professor Strong, Mr. and Mrs. Brown and Mr. and Mrs. Legge, how often they came over, and one of those who came oftenest and through a great number of years was Professor Gonner; many and many a Sunday he walked over from West Kirby to tea and would stay on until 9 or 10 o'clock, sometimes going with us to the service at Mr. Watson's church. On the summer afternoons he and James would pace the lawn together, talking, and we would have tea under the trees or in the alcove near the house, and often, when the raspberries were ripe, our friends would help us to gather them for tea.

Mr. Alick Cameron (the Assistant Director of Education) was another friend who came out constantly. James loved to see him come; he had the greatest admiration for him. I remember James

coming home after he had first seen Mr. Cameron and the interest with which he spoke of him, and it was always a pleasure to James to have him near. He very soon became a great help to him. He had Secondary Education under his special charge, and was most capable and very modest, and James trusted him more and more. He had a great admiration for the fine, brave way in which Mr. Cameron had won his education and the loving, loyal son he had been; these things stirred James deeply and were responsive to chords in his own soul. As the years went by, the love was on both sides, and the days were very happy they spent together, and later, in 1911, when Mr. Cameron went with us to Germany, James's joy at thinking of taking him on his first holiday abroad, was intense. We had a most delightful time and they were so happy together, and in Dresden we had a regular feast of music and opera.

At the beginning of January, 1908, Professor Sadler came to us for a week-end, before addressing a Students' Volunteer Missionary Conference on the Monday. Mr. Watson came in to meet him and there was a great talk on the training of students for the ministry, in which they and James were all keenly interested, and on which subject James and Mr. Watson had had many discussions. In the weeks preceding Mr. Sadler's visit, there had been heated discussions in Liverpool over religious teaching in the schools, especially as regarded the Collegiate School, but at the Education Committee on December 24th, after James's appeal and explanation that the only difference between the opening and closing prayers as now proposed was that dogmatic teaching of a denominational kind would be excluded, the amendment brought forward by certain members for the retention of the Apostles' Creed, was dropped and the report approved. Professor Sadler was

greatly interested in finding solutions for this thorny problem, and in sympathetically treating the many different views put forward at the time ; and during the week-end with us, he and James had long, interesting talks over it. On Saturday evening Vice-Chancellor Dale and Mr. Warr came over to meet him.

February brought the ordinary rush of work, and on February 13th James was to come home for a quiet evening and I was listening for the door bell to ring, as it was growing rather late, when suddenly the telephone bell rang instead. It was in the library and I answered it at once, and it was James's partner, Mr. Crooks, who spoke : ' I am very sorry to tell you,' he said, ' that Mr. Alsop has had an accident ; he has been shot in the office this afternoon by a mad client, but don't be anxious. He is not, I think, seriously wounded, and I am bringing him home. He is at the Northern Hospital now, but they think it will be right for him to come across with me in a cab, and Mr. Alsop wishes to come home. The bullet has already been extracted from his arm, and he is now in the doctors' room and having some coffee, and I am going to get him some warm things to come home in. You must not come ; we shall start before you could reach us and it will be all right. I shall take the greatest care of him and you will get everything ready at Ulverscroft and get the doctor there.'

When everything was put ready and his room was made warm and there was nothing more to do, the doctor and I waited during what seemed a lifetime. Once or twice the telephone bell rang, and five minutes after Mr. Crooks had first told me of the accident, someone rang up to inquire if Mr. Alsop was still alive. So we waited in that awful stillness. They came at last, the horses' feet crunching on the gravel path. James looked very pale as we led him in, wrapped round in a magenta knitted sofa blanket

from the Hospital, but his smile was there as he said : ' Don't be frightened, darling ; I'm all right ; I can walk up stairs.'

His arm had been dressed at the Hospital, so there was nothing more of that kind to be done that night, and when he was once in bed and his arm arranged comfortably on pillows, the only thing that seemed to trouble him was, that he was allowed nothing to eat, and he kept wishing he had not refused the piece of bread and butter which had been offered to him in the Hospital.

It is strange how one lives on quietly for so long, in a steady routine of work, and how it can be all broken in a moment.

When the morning came at last, we entered upon a strange day of thankfulness, anxiety and publicity.

By 8 o'clock such numbers of people were enquiring for him that we had to put out a bulletin, and when the doctors came at 9.30, I remember Dr. Floyd telling James that he had seen many bulletins in his life, but never one with such a crowded list of names upon it ; and by 10 o'clock I remember 15 telegrams had come from many parts of England, many of them asking for replies. The papers were full of accounts of the outrage, and the telephone bell was constantly ringing, and as the day went on letters came in by the hundred.

I was, however, unable to attend to any of them ; they were obliged to wait. We had so far no nurse, and James went through a long and painful time with the first dressing of his wound, and everything that went near him had to be sterilized. Later in the day we got a splendid nurse, who saw after all these things and was the greatest comfort to us both, through the three weeks she stayed with us. It was a time of great anxiety, but though James had many ups and downs, and sometimes made us very anxious, he never

really had any drawbacks. He was so calm and quiet himself, and when he was allowed later to read his letters, they were so wonderful in their expression of love and appreciation of him, that they were a great pleasure and stimulus to him in the days when he was getting better, and I cannot help quoting one or two which seemed indeed to express what came in them all.

Bishop Chavassee wrote: 'If this painful episode does nothing more, it will serve to show you in what high estimation you are held by all classes of the community, and how greatly your strenuous and self-denying services for the public good are appreciated by your friends and fellow-citizens. May God be with you and spare you to us for many years.'

Mr. Willink wrote: 'I only hope you have not many enemies with that sporting proclivity and will not again give us such a shock. I dare say you do not know what numbers of people look to you as one of the best hopes of good things in the city; perhaps this thing will reveal a little of this truth to you.'

The Lord Mayor wrote: 'It is scarcely possible to express the sorrow and indignation which the news of the outrage has excited in the minds of your friends (and I don't know of anyone who is not your friend). Everyone is indeed most thankful that you have escaped.'

And Sir Edward Lawrence wrote: 'We cannot spare one who has rendered such service in guiding the destiny of our city and citizens.'

At the end of three weeks James was so far better that he was able to go to Bournemouth on March 10th.

While we were there another great shock came. Mr. Warr died very suddenly, and James felt one of his dearest and best friends had gone. They had been almost like brothers, and James loved him and had the greatest admiration for him.

Professor Gonner came down to us knowing how greatly James would feel this shock, and was very kind and comforting, telling us all he could about it and doing all he could to cheer James.

James wrote one of the many appreciations of Mr. Warr which filled the papers, and his whole heart was in what he wrote. Before we left Bournemouth Mrs. Warr herself wrote to James : ' You were one of his greatest and dearest friends, and he used to talk to me so often about you, and he admired and loved you very much and watched with the greatest joy all your work for the city.'

While we were still away, James was already busy planning the best way of starting in the city some public memorial to Mr. Warr, and I remember him saying to me : ' We *must* get home soon ; it must be done at once, and these things must not be left, but carried out while everyone is eagerly awake to the great work he has done, and all he has been to so many. He is too great a man not to have some great public memorial, and if it is not started, it may, as so often is the case, never be started. There must be a public meeting called at the Town Hall if possible, and I am quite sure there will be a great response.'

During our time in Bournemouth, the selection of the Headmistress for the new Aigburth Vale School came before the Secondary Committee, and Miss Coates was chosen. Lady Hampson, Vice-Chairman, took James's place while he was away, and sent him lively and amusing letters about all that took place, and about the great help Vice-Chancellor Dale gave her when any difficulties arose. James indeed had a great letter post each morning. He had two big law cases coming on in London, and in the middle of our time he was obliged to leave Bournemouth and attend consultations in London over these cases, and see to other business as well, though his arm was still in a

sling. He still kept receiving numbers of letters of congratulation on his recovery, and resolutions passed by Committees and Associations expressing the same thing. Sir Robert Hampson also wrote warmly welcoming James's decision about this time, to become a member, under the new rules, of the Conservative Club, telling him that he himself was proposing, and Sir Charles Petrie seconding his name, and that all his many friends were eagerly awaiting his return. He came back to an intensely busy time in every direction, and threw himself into everything as it came along, and was everywhere enthusiastically welcomed back to his work again.

On May 16th, the trial of Vaughan came on at the Liverpool Assizes, on a charge of wounding Mr. Alsop with intent to murder him. It lasted until 2.17, when the Jury found the prisoner guilty of the charge. Mr. Justice Coleridge, however, deferred sentence; but on May 18th Vaughan was sentenced to penal servitude for five years. On June 19th, just a month later, the prisoner appealed against the sentence, but the Lord Chief Justice dismissed the appeal.

On July 16th, 1908, the Aigburth Vale School was formally opened by the Lord Mayor, Dr. Caton. It was a day long looked forward to, and very specially so by James, who, as Chairman of Secondary Education, had eagerly planned for this school and watched its progress on every step of the way. It was also the first *new* school built for Secondary Education in the city, and for many years was to be the only *new* building, until after James's death, when the new buildings of the school which bore his name were started at the close of 1923. All the other great schools which rose up as the years went by, were adaptations of other schools to the modern requirements, or of old large residential houses in the outskirts

of the city which were altered and added to for the purpose.

How well I remember that opening day! The fine buildings of the Aigburth Vale School stood at last ready and equipped, but the rain poured down in torrents, and the approach to the school was a sea of mud across which we walked on planks; the delightful grounds round were not yet in the beautiful order which characterised them a few months later.

A crowded and enthusiastic audience of well-known Liverpool people interested in education, and parents of girls who were to take up happy life and study there in future, filled the beautiful Central Hall which is a great feature of the school. The speeches were full of hope and promise of the good work which was likely to be done there for the advancement of higher education in the city, work which would encourage and prepare girls to enter the University later, and also prepare them for taking up any of the professions and occupations open to educated women.

James spoke, explaining the objects of the school and pointing out the high qualifications of the teaching staff, and he reminded those present that the beautiful site on which the school had been built had been a suggestion of Mr. Philip Holt. He also reminded those citizens present, of the urgent recommendation made by Professor Sadler in his Report, that a good Secondary School for Girls at a moderate fee was very greatly needed at the north end of Liverpool also. It was typical of James that, when at last he saw some object of his work and interest established, his thoughts at once went forward to some other work in front which still needed doing.

At this time everyone was mourning the loss of Lord Derby, and also feeling more and more the loss of Mr. C. W. Jones, who had died very suddenly at the

beginning of the year. Both were being sadly missed at the University, and the University was now without a Chancellor.

In July the new gymnasium at the Holt Secondary School was opened, and I was asked to open it, while James gave a short address announcing to the school at the same time that at no very distant date they were to have some of the most beautiful playing fields about Liverpool, as the Estate Committee had set apart for that school a large piece of land on the Calderstones estate.

In November Mr. S. E. Brown was appointed Headmaster of the Collegiate School in Shaw Street, but was not to begin his work there until the New Year; but on December 21st James invited him to dinner in Liverpool to be present afterwards at the Prize Distribution at the School, when he was welcomed and introduced to the boys and to the large company present, in preparation for taking up his work later. It was a delightful and successful evening, and Mr. Brown wrote afterwards to James: 'I cannot let a day pass without expressing to you again my appreciation and thanks for the very kindly way you welcomed me last night at the dinner, and for the introduction you gave me to the boys of the Collegiate School. The reception was most hearty and encouraging, and I look forward with pleasure and hope to the work of the coming year.'

At the Meeting of the University Court at the end of November, Lord Derby was unanimously elected Chancellor, and Dr. Muspratt, in the course of his speech to the Court, gave the promise that the new Arts Building, which had been so long delayed, was now to be vigorously pushed forward. James, who seconded the Report of Council and Senate, drew attention to the fact that in the six years since the University Charter was granted, the

number of matriculating students had almost doubled, not by a sudden bound, but by a steady increase, and that, taking all the different classes of students, there were now about 1,100 students actually working in the University.

All this winter James took an active part at Trinity Church; he became a member of the Management Committee and was on a Selection Committee, as Mr. Watson had been ill again, and was still far from strong, and to find some help for him had become very necessary. We saw a good deal of Mr. and Mrs. Watson in those days, and almost every week they came to us for a quiet evening, and James and Mr. Watson would have long talks in the library, and we would have reading or music afterwards. There were many people, too, at that time that James was anxious to know better and to talk to about the University and educational matters, and constantly we had someone interesting coming to join us at dinner and have long talks afterwards. These quiet, friendly evenings rested James wonderfully after his crowded days, but as Christmas drew near, Prize Distributions and evening meetings of all kinds put an end to them.

Christmas was always for us a happy and merry time, and James loved it. He was almost always Father Christmas, and this Christmas of 1908 was a particularly happy one. We had our tiny nephew and niece with us, and little Enid Watson, and we turned them into three white-winged fairies, Faith, Hope and Love, and they helped Father Christmas to distribute his gifts to the household. On Boxing Day we had friends to tea and the white-winged fairies appeared again and ran about helping everyone.

Christmas, like holidays, always refreshed James greatly, and he entered upon it with the same ready

enjoyment and came out from it with fresh energy for work.

The spring of 1909 seemed full of urgent discussions on all kinds of questions. The University was greatly in need of funds, and many discussions took place as to the desirability of applying to Lancashire and Cheshire for an increased grant. There was also a great controversy going on in the Education Committee and in the Council as to who ought to pay for furniture for new Voluntary Schools. A payment had been already made by the Committee to some Catholic Schools, and this raised the question, which was very hotly discussed, and the members of the Committee at one time were threatened to be charged personally with this payment which had been made. The discussion lasted for months, and the question involved the future furnishing of all Voluntary Schools and became, I should think, one of the most heated discussions ever held in the Council.

In March James was seriously ill with bronchitis and heart weakness, and in April had to go to Bournemouth for a complete change, and again the doctors urged the necessity of taking life more quietly and giving up some of his work, and in the end he agreed to take Saturday off and golf whenever it was possible.

During his stay at Bournemouth he was, however, by no means quiet, and went to London more than once for a day or two over the Railway Bill and over his Arbitration, which was still undecided; but the change of London seemed to do him good, and the weather was warm and beautiful. During this illness Mr. Oulton wrote the kindest letters, assuring him that 'his well-beloved Secondary Education should have very special care,' and begging him to take care of himself.

In July James wrote from London: 'I went to the

House of Commons last night, and was fortunate enough to get a good seat under the gallery. The Finance Bill is being hotly debated, and I heard Balfour, Haldane and several other notable men. It was so interesting that I remained till after 1 o'clock. The House itself sat till 7. Happy are those who are not members.' In the same letter he says: 'I was at Queen's Gate, all the morning with some clients, and with another client at Lincoln's Inn more than three hours this afternoon. To-morrow I have business in the city, and in the afternoon Sir William Geary is to have lunch with me at the Reform Club, and afterwards I go to the Board of Education. I shall undoubtedly catch the 5.30 train home.'

About this time Mr. Legge wrote expressing much pleasure on hearing that James had consented to take the Chairmanship of the School of Commerce Sub-Committee, adding: 'there was clearly a feeling of exhilaration all round the table when the announcement was made. Everyone felt that the success of the new venture was assured. I can assure you that we shall spare no pains in the office to make this new burden you have assumed as light as possible.' In That August we had a great holiday abroad, going by Regensburg and Nuremberg to the Bayreuth Wagner Festival, and afterwards to the Dolomites; and returning by Innsbruck we came in for a great gathering in that fine old city of 60,000 mountain troops all in their ancient costumes. All these things James enjoyed with a keen delight. But when he was once back he threw himself into his work again and took up his interests one by one, pushing them forward with a new energy, a fresh initiative, a keener hope after the refreshing change and rest of his holiday.

The Queen Mary High School for Girls at the north end of Liverpool was taken seriously in hand in the autumn of 1909. A fine old house and grounds

had been bought already, but it had been thought advisable to watch the development of the Aigburth Vale School for a year before carrying out the additions and alterations for this new school. The Aigburth Vale School was now proving itself a great success, and the 'Queen Mary' was taken up with renewed enthusiasm.

In October James gave an address to the members of the Liverpool and District Bankers' Institute on 'The Education of a Business Man.' The meeting took place in the Law Association Rooms. Mr. James Hope Simpson, President of the Bankers' Institute, presided, and there was a large attendance of gentlemen prominently identified with the Dock Board, Shipping, Commercial and Bank life of the city. The lecture was afterwards finely reviewed in the *Liverpool Journal of Commerce*, the *Daily Post* and the *Courier*.

The lecture was an appeal for the opportunities of Commercial Education, which now lay ready to hand in the School of Commerce, to be more widely taken advantage of than they were, and it appealed to the bankers of Liverpool and also to the great commercial and business firms in the city, not only to *approve* a wider and worthier system of commercial education suited to the needs of Liverpool's world-wide commerce, but to see that more and better facilities should be given to the young men training in their banks and offices, to allow of them taking advantage of the Commercial education offered by the School of Commerce. He asked that ways and means should be found by which, when a young man had gone through this special training, his position in the office should be advanced.

Whether in law or in banking or in commercial life, or even more in the teaching profession, James's most earnest efforts lay in trying to provide

opportunities for a wider and more intellectual view and comprehension of the work taken up, and to encourage those starting on their careers, both for their work's sake and for their own development, to take advantage of the many great opportunities provided, and at their hand.

In reviewing at a later date the great interest James took in the business life of the city, Sir James Hope Simpson wrote: 'It was natural that a mind so receptive and observant as Mr. Alsop's should be keenly alive to the leading features of commercial enterprise presented by the great business centre in which he lived. His professional clientèle included many leading firms and companies, and many of his friends were found among the business men of the city. He thus came to acquire a wide knowledge of commercial transactions, operations and methods, and to admire the ability and care with which the great trade of the port and the operations of its chief markets were conducted. He never claimed that his own profession or any of the learned professions were to be regarded as superior to a commercial calling. With such an attitude of mind and such opportunities for seeing the inner working of many commercial undertakings, it is not surprising that Mr. Alsop himself came to possess and exercise many of the qualities of a first-class business man.

'While his commercial clients recognised in him his mastery of the law and his knowledge of its principles and details, they *also* found in him one who could enter into their business point of view, and his advice was frequently sought by them on questions of business policy as distinct from the legal aspect of the question at issue, and often his suggestions of this kind were not less valuable than his legal advice.

'Out of the knowledge and observation of the life of the business community arose also the great

interest he took in commercial education. He held that "increased complexity and increased competition being the characteristics of modern commerce, it seems to follow that the education of a business man should be such as will develop in him business power and business knowledge." By business power, Mr. Alsop meant "that combination of qualities which enables a man to deal effectively with large complicated affairs, intellectual grasp, alertness, breadth of view combined with attention to detail, promptness with patience, courage to take a fair risk, and caution to avoid over-commitments." By business knowledge he meant "an intelligent knowledge of the objects, principles and methods, as well as details of the particular business, of the commodities with which it deals, their production, transit and distribution, and of the languages of the countries with which the particular trade is carried on."

'Developing these ideas, Mr. Alsop became a strong advocate of a liberal education, together with a certain amount of technical education, as highly desirable for business men, and he devoted much energy to the establishment in the University of Liverpool of a Department and Chair of Commerce, designed to give to the young business men of the city the opportunity of an education of this description.

'While the profession of the Law was Mr. Alsop's chief interest in life, it is a pleasure to recognise that his wide sympathies and great capacity for affairs led him to extend his interest to business also, and that he brought to the service of business men generally and the concerns with which he was more closely connected, the same qualities of courage, calm and wise judgment, and wide experience, which distinguished his professional career and the great and varied services which he rendered to the community in other directions.' These words were

dictated by Sir James Hope Simpson a year or two after James died, and during his own long and fatal illness. They had been for years very great friends, and in the course of their work had been brought into constant and almost daily intercourse.

During the autumn of 1909, James had the pleasure of welcoming to England some of his New Zealand relatives. His cousin, Mr. Charles Holdsworth, manager of one of the big shipping lines, came to visit us with his wife and three children, and they remained in Liverpool some weeks. They came from Dunedin, and brought James much news of other relations in New Zealand. A year or two later James's cousin Beresford Willcox came over to England to join the English army, having won a commission in the Sherwood Foresters, and when war broke out later, he was amongst the first thousands who crossed to France. He and James became deeply attached and both before and after the war they spent happy times together.

In November 1909, James presided at the first Prize Distribution at the New Aigburth Vale School, and commented with some pride on the progress made within a year of its formation, the school, without any nucleus to start with, having now nearly 150 girls on the register. Mrs. F. A. Steel, the novelist, gave away the prizes and spoke on the gift of imagination, and Miss Coates, the Headmistress, spoke charmingly, and filled everyone with hope of the greater progress to be expected in the coming year.

In November Professor Sadler came to stay with us and to deliver the prizes at the Collegiate School. Before the meeting began, James and I held a reception in the Headmaster's room to a number of people interested in education in Liverpool whom James wished not only to have the pleasure of meeting Mr. Sadler, but also of being introduced to Mr. and

Mrs. Brown in the newly arranged and beautiful school buildings. It was a very successful evening, but, unfortunately, there was a draught on the platform, and James took a severe cold which laid him up for some time afterwards.

On December 13th Mr. Weisse, Headmaster of the Liverpool Institute, wrote with much sorrow that James could not be present at the Institute Prize Distribution 'after the gale he had been caught in at Shaw Street.'

On November 27th, 1909, at the meeting of the University Court, Sir John Brunner was elected senior Pro-Chancellor in the place of the late Sir Edward Lawrence, and on the following Tuesday, at the first meeting of Council in the new Session, James was elected President of the Council and Pro-Chancellor in succession to Dr. Muspratt, whose six years term of office had just expired.

It was a great and much appreciated honour, but James was still ill at home and was unable to be at the Council when his name was proposed. Dr. Muspratt wrote beforehand regretting much that James and I had been unable to be at his luncheon party on the previous Saturday, and hoping James might be able to be at the Council on the Tuesday, when he was to have the great pleasure of proposing him as President.

A wonderful number of congratulations came to James on his new appointment, which was indeed to last nine years, until the war was over, as all appointments stood as they were in those terrible years that were to come, and no changes were made.

During these nine years of anxiety and service, James and Vice-Chancellor Dale became closer and closer friends, and their mutual work for the University and for educational interests generally in the city and in the county became a daily concern.

When I used to think of James the enthusiastic

and disappointed schoolboy with his ardent longing for a University career dashed, because there was no University in his own city where he could win an entrance, and when I thought of his brave struggles to win a fine honours degree after all, in spite of barriers and difficulties, and now saw him the proud President of the Council and Pro-Chancellor of this great University which he had helped to raise in his own beloved city, it was not only with a great pride that I thought of it, but with deep thankfulness, that the dream of his boyhood had never been allowed to fade, and that through those long years, hand in hand with so many great and beloved fellow-workers, he had watched this noble seat of learning rise, and had at last been called to fill this honoured post as President and Pro-Chancellor. His work for the College and for the University had indeed been constant, untiring, devoted, but it had been the inspiration and delight of his life and had carried him through many sorrows and many trials, with hope still high and strong burning in his heart.

His own education, which had been so great a passion in his earlier days, had gone on gathering force and power as the years went by, one study ever leading to another, one interest awakening others, and when he put forth his whole strength to get these treasures of learning ready at hand for every boy and girl who had courage and ability to work for them, he was, I feel sure, silently remembering in his heart the long, hard struggle in his early years, out of which he had come with loss of bodily strength, even of sight, and the memory of which made him determined now that those who followed after him should find the way of learning kinder, more hospitable, less difficult.

On January 7th of the year 1910, Lord Justice Kennedy came to stay with us, in order to be present at the meeting in the Liverpool Town Hall when the

Memorials to Mr. Warr were to be presented, and to be present afterwards at the dinner of the Law Society. After the Lord Mayor had announced at the A. F. Warr Memorial Meeting, the endowment of a Lectureship in Equity in the Faculty of Law and also the endowment of a bed in the Royal Infirmary in memory of Mr. Warr, he presented also to James, as President of the Council of the University, a bust of Mr. Warr to be placed in the University Library.

James, in accepting the bust in the name of the University, spoke of Mr. Warr's great gifts, his splendid services, his charming personality, and of how he had been one of the University's truest friends. He spoke of the union in Mr. Warr of the idealist and the practical man, and how wonderfully attractive to Mr. Warr had been the idea of a University, a seat of knowledge, a home of research and inspiration to youth, an intellectual, even a moral and spiritual force, which should in time permeate the whole life of the city. All Mr. Warr's powers, he said, had been employed in support of the great movement by which the University was founded.

After Lord Justice Kennedy left us, he wrote me a very delightful letter, thanking us for our hospitality and saying: 'A perusal of the general Prospectus of Evening Schools 1909-1910, which Mr. Alsop gave me, confirms me in the wonder with which our midnight conversation on Liverpool education filled me. I used to be rather doubtful as to the balance of gain and loss in multiplying Universities; but I see that I never properly appreciated the gain to the locality in the creation of an educational spirit in the community in which the organisation is placed.'

At the Annual Dinner of the Insurance Institute which took place about this time, and at which James as Pro-Chancellor and Vice-Chancellor Dale were guests, Mr. Alcock, the President, in proposing the

toast 'The educational interests of Liverpool' spoke of the School of Commerce and of the value it had proved, and the assistance it had given to the Liverpool Insurance Institute, and said that without the assistance received from the School, the Institute would not have been able to carry on its work with such success. In reply to the toast, James urged that it was the duty and also the desire of the Education Committee to provide whatever the Insurance Institute and the Bankers' Institute required for the education of their young people in their offices. In speaking of the University, he said that it was becoming a great centre for the education of Liverpool as a whole, but that he did not know that any of his hearers realised what it was doing for *individuals*. He said that he thought one great benefit which the University had conferred on Liverpool was the bringing home to people that they were not educating a number of students, but that they were educating John and Elizabeth, and that John's and Elizabeth's lives would be sweetened and brightened and made more useful by the education which the University was endeavouring to give.

On January 25th, at the Annual Meeting of the voluntary 'Council of Education,' Mr. S. E. Brown, who had come but a year before to Liverpool, said how much he had been impressed by the unity with which all shades of political and religious feeling in the city strove to further the cause of education. James, in speaking at the same meeting on *free* places in the schools, said that he was not sure that they realised the magnitude of the new problem which had presented itself. Under the regulations of the Board of Education, apart from the Junior City Scholarships of the Education Committee, they sent up to the *Secondary* Schools every year between 300 and 400 boys and girls. That these offers were appreciated

was shown by the further fact that nearly four times the number of boys and girls presented themselves for examinations for these free places. Many of these children were from the poorest districts of the city. The parents denied themselves for their children, but in many cases they could not afford to provide them with a better standard of clothing or with books or tram fares. There was therefore a large field open for doing good in this direction, and there was need for substantial pecuniary help.

All this January, James was actively engaged in a variety of different ways. He was out in Liverpool in the evenings visiting the School of Commerce Classes and the Y.M.C.A. Commercial Classes, and on February 4th was at Everton, at the Boys' Society, and a day or two later was in London at a Universities' Conference.

On March 5th, Mr. W. H. Lever, President of the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, gave a large luncheon party at Thornton Manor, and James and I went out to it with many others connected with the University. After the luncheon was over Mr. Lever announced his great gift to the University of £60,000 value of shares in the Bromborough Estate Co. and the promise of an assured 3 per cent. on these shares for ten years, until the estate had developed. He had won this £60,000 in a libel action against the *Daily Mail* and other papers. The action, he said, had been undertaken entirely to clear his name and that of the Company—Lever Bros. He had never had any intention of going for damages for himself, and he never intended that any of the money should go to himself. He had been looking round to see what he could do to get rid of it, and he thought of the University.

James, as Pro-Chancellor of the University, formally accepted the gift, and expressed the sympathy of them

all with Mr. Lever in the difficult position in which he had been placed, and congratulated him on the happy issue of the actions which he had been forced to take, thanking him 'for the noble way in which he had decided to apply the proceeds of the actions.' He continued that some of them in connection with the University might have felt under a temptation to wish that those actions which had led to such successful results for Mr. Lever had been more numerous; they seemed to miss the names of Sir Edward Russell and Mr. R. Heald (who were with them that day) amongst the defendants. Had these names appeared, untold wealth might have flowed in, in addition to the munificent sums which Mr. Lever had already mentioned. But he would say at once, on behalf of the University, that they resisted that temptation, as they did not wish to see their friends, Sir Edward Russell and Mr. Heald, placed in a position of defendants in an action for libel. Mr. Lever's gift was very noble and in a sense was unparalleled in the history of the University, both as to the circumstances under which it was made and as being unequalled in its amount. He congratulated Mr. Lever on the scheme he had made for the distribution of the money, and said that the three objects Mr. Lever had named were amongst the most promising departments of study in the University. Reverting to the deputation from the Universities, including Liverpool, which waited upon the Chancellor of the Exchequer on the previous day, with regard to larger contributions from the Government, he said it was then pointed out that the assistance which the Government could give had not checked or restricted private munificence but, on the contrary, had tended to stimulate private munificence. The noble gift of Mr. Lever was an additional evidence of that fact. They hoped that in return private munificence would stimulate public generosity.

Only a few days after our return from a month's holiday in Rome, King Edward VII died on May 6th.

On May 12th there was a special joint meeting in the University of Council and Senate to record their deep sorrow in the death of the King and to pass resolutions of condolence with the Royal Family. James, as Pro-Chancellor, spoke after Lord Derby, who moved the resolution. James recalled the fact that King Edward had granted their University Charter, and he pointed out the great interest he had always shown in educational progress of all kinds, and that during his reign, which had not been a long one, six new Universities had been founded. He spoke of the late King as having been, perhaps, the greatest constitutional monarch the world had ever seen, because, while adhering strictly to the limits imposed upon him by our Constitution, he exerted a wealth and an extent of influence, which was unparalleled in the history of any monarch of this country. It was due, no doubt, to the wide knowledge which the King possessed beyond that of any of his subjects, to what Mr. Asquith had happily described as his genius of common sense, to his abiding sense of public duty, and above all to the spirit of personal kindness and affection for his subjects, and the sympathy which made him feel that their sorrows were his sorrows and their joys were his joys.

On Saturday, July 8th, the new King held a Court in St. James' Palace, at which His Majesty received on the throne, Deputations with Addresses.

Deputations from privileged bodies were separately introduced into the Presence by the Lord Chamberlain, and the King was graciously pleased to read a reply to each of these Addresses. An Address was presented from the University of Liverpool, and the Deputation was introduced by the Earl of Derby, the Chancellor, who presented James as Pro-Chancellor, Dr. A. W. W. Dale, Vice-Chancellor, and Dr. Herdman,

who represented the Academic Staff of the University.

The preparation for this event in the gathering together and packing of clothes was memorable, as both James and the Vice-Chancellor had to go in full Court Dress, with swords, and wear their Pro-Chancellor's and Vice-Chancellor's robes on the top, and in all this grandeur they managed to get their swords entangled in getting into a taxi and had rather a hot time of it before they got free again. However, everything went well and they enjoyed it greatly. And I still have a snapshot which was taken of them and Dr. Herdman as they left the Palace.

Later that summer, James distributed the prizes on Speech Day at the Birkenhead School, and spoke on the advantages of a good day school and of the differences between the older and more modern Universities, and in closing made an appeal to the boys: 'It is you boys who make the school. It is you boys who have inherited such splendid traditions here, who have such grand opportunities now for making yourselves fit for the work of life. It is you who have got the duty—and it should be your delight—of handing down the great name of your school unsmirched, untarnished, and as fresh as when it came into your hands.' After the distribution was over we had luncheon with the Headmaster and a party of friends in the School House, and afterwards watched the sports on the beautiful ground outside the school.

After the spring holiday in Rome, we did not go abroad again, but in September went to Sandsend, near Whitby, and were almost washed away by the great waves which beat against the Hotel wall during the wild storms we encountered there, the spray pouring down the window panes and making us sometimes feel that if an extra large wave came, it might sweep us out at the window, some night.

It was a wild corner at the best of times, and after several big storms we were thankful to reach our quiet home again, but the air was fine and bracing and James returned considerably invigorated.

Early in October we dined at Woolton with Mr. and Mrs. Oulton, and attended with them the Prize Distribution in connection with the evening classes for higher education in Woolton, and James gave an address to the students, and a day or two later he attended the Annual Dinner of the Literary and Philosophical Society in Liverpool, responding for the University and expressing the belief that this Society had been one of the most important of the various influences which had led to the foundation of the University. 'The Society,' he said, 'was founded by a number of men, of whom William Roscoe was the best known, and who established also the Athenaeum and the Royal Institution. All these institutions have carried on their great traditions and have contributed to the progressive movement which has culminated in the University.' This idea was taken up by Professor Ramsay Muir who spoke afterwards, and who in a very interesting speech sketched the rise of the Renaissance of learning in Liverpool at the close of the 18th and the beginning of the 19th Century.

On October 22nd the foundation stone was laid of the new Engineering Laboratories at the University, to be built on the hitherto vacant University Quadrangle through the generosity of three Liverpool shipowners, Mr. T. Fenwick Harrison, Mr. Heath Harrison, and Mr. J. W. Hughes, who made a joint gift of £35,000.

Before the ceremony took place, a meeting was held in the Arts Theatre, and James, as Pro-Chancellor, presided, and in the course of his address said that the ceremony that day marked a very great advance not only in the history of the University but in the history of Engineering in Liverpool from both an educational

and a practical point of view. In the Liverpool University and in University College which preceded it, Engineering had always played a great part. He traced the advance made during the College days, from the Harrison Chair of Engineering founded in 1886 to the erection of the Andrew Walker Laboratories which followed so quickly after, and which were said to be at that time the finest engineering laboratories connected with any educational institution in the country. The work developed so rapidly that in 1903, when the University received its Charter, a Faculty of Engineering was granted, and Liverpool was one of the earliest Universities in the Kingdom to possess a Faculty devoted solely to Engineering. In the same year the Jardine Chair of Electrotechnics was added, and the Chair of Civil Engineering, and the Alexander Elder Chair of Naval Architecture followed soon after. But though Liverpool possessed the first Laboratory in the Kingdom twenty years ago, it has since lagged behind other Universities. These new buildings and their equipment would serve the engineering students for many years to come and would be of service, not only to the University but to the City. It had been arranged that those students at the City Technical School who were able to benefit by the Higher teaching, might proceed from that school to the University, and this was another illustration of the co-operation which existed between the Corporation and the University. 'It is a special pride,' he added, 'to know that the donors of these new laboratories are engaged in the trade of this city, for it enables us to realise more and more that the University is not merely a University *in* Liverpool but is indeed the University *of* Liverpool.'

It was during the summer of 1910 that Mr. Weisse gave one of his charming concerts at the Institute School and Madam Schumann came down to play,

and after the concert was over we were all invited, in a most impromptu way, to meet her at a beautiful house not far away, where we had a delightful gathering. In July there was a luncheon party at the Edge Hill Training College to commemorate its 25th Anniversary, and a performance by the girl students of Tennyson's 'Princess.' All kinds of gatherings, educational, law, and University, took place that summer, and at the University sports we distributed the prizes.

It was in October, 1910, that James first started his dinners at the Exchange Club in Liverpool to try and bring into closer touch the University and the city, and he continued these dinners from time to time until the close of 1920. James generally had about thirty guests and placed them at five tables, and when dessert came the heads of the tables changed places, so that there was an opportunity for more intercourse, and later they all adjourned to another room for further smoke and talk. He spent much time in thinking out each party carefully beforehand and in placing those together he knew would be interested to meet, and I think these parties did a great deal in bringing the University and the city together and were much appreciated.

In November, Lord Rosebery unveiled the Tablet for the University Students' Union, which was then nearing completion, the unveiling taking place in the Central Hall. On the same day there was a conferment of Hon. Degrees, when not only Lord Rosebery, but Lord Cromer, Sir Archibald Geikie, Lord Morley and John Burns received Hon. Degrees from the Liverpool University.

A fortnight later the meeting of the University Court took place and, in the absence of Lord Derby and Sir John Brunner, James presided at the Court. In his speech he took a retrospective glance over the

changes and work at the University during the previous year. The University, he said, had lost many staunch and generous friends; it had lost King Edward VII who had granted its Charter: it had lost Sir Alfred Jones, Mr. Sutton Timmis, Mr. Hope Simpson, and Professor Campbell Brown, who was one of the original Professors appointed when the University College was founded. Professor MacCunn had retired after a long life of service, and one could not but feel peculiarly, the snapping of a tie on Professor MacCunn's retirement, because his work at the University was so great and far reaching, and his influence in the city, and particularly on those with whom he came in contact, was so great and uplifting that they felt the deepest regret that his long connection with the University was over. They had also lost through another cause their brilliant Professor Myres, who had been called to strenuous work in his own University of Oxford.

On the whole it had been a year of steady growth and developments. The number of matriculated students working for degrees had risen from 666 to 732, and the whole of the registered students, including those working for degrees and those working for diplomas, or engaged in research or post-graduate work, was 1,224 as against 1,144 in the previous year. Amongst their acquisitions during the year were to be counted Professor Baly and Professor Mair. One of the chief events had been the magnificent gift of Mr. Lever, the largest gift in any one sum that the University had ever received.

Two new buildings were now in course of erection for University purposes. The new Engineering extension was making rapid progress, and only a few days before Lord Rosebery had unveiled the Tablet to be placed in the Hall of the Students' Union, which was becoming an actual fact after many years of promise. The standard also of work done in the University had

been increased, and since the granting of the Charter no instruction was now given in the University to students below the stage of matriculation. The standard of the Matriculation Examination had also been steadily growing higher. Some of their students now went in for degrees in honours, and therefore more availed themselves of the opportunity of staying a fourth year. In addition to this they had a large number of men and women engaged in post-graduate work. The University had indeed more than doubled in its numbers, and its standard from the entrance to the finish had been largely raised. The staff, too, had increased from 26 professors in 1902-3 to 41 in 1909-10 and there were 34 endowed Chairs as compared with 20 seven years ago. He said he could not close his review of the work without referring to the greater scope and breadth of the work now carried on at the University, and he gave as an instance of the development the important example of the Tropical School. It was not at all the preparation of students for ordinary degrees. It was research work, which was the application of science to human needs and to the amelioration of human misery. Then, again, there was the School of Archaeology, which was a feature which, he believed, had no parallel among the Universities in the United Kingdom. The Professors of Archaeology had by their research in distant lands, as well as by their work in our midst, added greatly to the knowledge of ancient times and ancient ways, and their work was a distinct and absolute contribution to the sum of human knowledge. The Town Planning Department, the School of Social Service and many other Departments were also instances of the broadening work of the University. It was not mere knowledge, not merely the preparing for degrees, although that was always a very important and essential feature, but the University was also a home for research

and a centre for the distribution of knowledge and for the elevation of humanity.

A General Election took place at the close of 1910, and James and many other Unionists were facing a difficult position. They were Free Traders and strongly opposed to Tariff Reform advocated by a certain section of their party, but they were still more afraid of the policy of the Government in wishing to destroy the veto of the House of Lords.

On December 1st there appeared this letter to the Editor of the *Courier* :

UNIONIST FREE TRADERS AND THE CRISIS.
A RALLY TO THE UNION.

DEAR SIR,

While adhering to the opinions upon Free Trade we have always held, we think the issue before the country to be determined by the approaching election, demands that we should support the Unionist candidate in every constituency, and we therefore venture to appeal to all moderate men, whether Free Traders or nor, to throw the weight of their influence in the scale against the dangerous policy of the present Government which, in destroying the veto of the House of Lords, would practically create a single Chamber Constitution. This, among other serious consequences, would involve the destruction of the Union.

Wm. B. Forwood

H. H. Hornby

F. C. Danson

Robert Gladstone

Alfred Dobell

S. G. Sinclair

James W. Alsop

Mr. Harold Cox visited Liverpool in December to distribute prizes in connection with the Council of Education. In his address, he spoke strongly in favour of voluntary associations, and went on to denounce the giving of Scholarships by Public Bodies, and said that it was an abuse of the power of taxation and that it ought not to be permitted. James, in speaking later, said he felt inclined to cross swords with Mr. Cox in reference to some of his statements. There was, he

thought, another side to the suggestion that Scholarships should only be given out of private funds. After arguing the point, he continued that to his mind there were many things which could be better done by the State than by the individual. He also thought that if they could send out boys and girls who could raise themselves above their poor surroundings, then they had fully justified the expenditure which they had made upon them.

On December 12th, James presided at the Holt Secondary School, and in his introductory remarks spoke of the great name the school bore, which had traditions attached to it which should be an incentive to the scholars to go on and make the school worthy of that great name. They would make their own traditions, and it was for the scholars to feel that they were there not solely for their own individual good, but that they were also part of a great school which was going to be a great force in the city and going to hand down great traditions to those who came after them. The school had had the distinction of passing no fewer than nine boys and girls in the Matriculation Examination; he congratulated the Headmaster and Staff on the splendid results achieved.

On December 16th, he was present at the Queen Mary School for Girls, when there was a concert and gathering at the close of the first term of the new school.

Secondary Education was certainly now vigorously at work in Liverpool, and James watched with the deepest interest the development of these new schools.

Early in January of 1911, the North of England Educational Conference and the Classical Association met in Liverpool, and we had one of the delegates staying with us; and after the various meetings during the day, there were Receptions in the evenings at the University, the Town Hall, and the Walker Art Gallery.

In February Professor MacCunn wrote to James :

MY DEAR ALSOP,

The University Press are bringing out for me a little volume, 'Liverpool Addresses on Ethics of Social Work.' Will you allow me to dedicate it to you? It would be a great pleasure to me if you would, and a matter of much satisfaction to offer this small tribute to you and to your work for Liverpool.

Sincerely yours,
JOHN MACCUNN.

This was a very great pleasure to James. In the University, Professor MacCunn was one of those he admired and loved most, and he had the deepest respect for him, and this kindly recognition and sign of friendship was warmly treasured by him, and I have often wondered if Professor MacCunn ever had an idea of the joy it gave him.

At the end of February, there was a memorable gathering at the University and a presentation to Professor MacCunn on his retirement from the University. No one had won more devoted friends than he had. James, as Pro-Chancellor, was in the Chair, and in his opening words he recalled how Professor MacCunn had been one of that small band who gathered together to introduce something in the shape of Collegiate or University life to Liverpool, where it was previously practically unknown. In those early days that band of workers got a response from only a small section of their townsmen, but gradually they acquired an extended influence, which became in time so potent that with the help of other comrades who joined with them they were able to bring the University College to a position in which the College fairly demanded that it should be converted into a University, and the City felt it right to respond to that demand. Those early Professors, James continued, were the true founders of the

University of Liverpool, and it was their influence, coupled with all the great things that had come to help them since, that had made the University an institution of which they in Liverpool were now justly proud. He spoke of Professor MacCunn not only as having been a very great teacher and a man of profound knowledge of the subjects which he taught, but also as one who inspired in all a sense of civic duty, and he thought it was not the least part—perhaps it was the greatest part—of Professor MacCunn's real service to the city, that he had taught the men who ruled the city to be interested in public work and that he had set before them high and noble ideals of what public service should be, and that he had done this not only by his direct teaching but by his writings. His books were read far beyond the circle of his pupils and his personal friends. Professor MacCunn's works occupied rather a unique position in the literature of the subject; they were, so to speak, an application to modern 19th and 20th century life of the great eternal principles of ethics and of political philosophy. Professor MacCunn had endeared himself to his past students and to all who had the privilege of coming into contact with him by his singular nobility and singleness of character.

Many others spoke, and Professor MacCunn in the course of his reply said that a great deal of valuable philosophic literature had been written on public spirit, but he thought that the best lesson of public spirit he had ever met with was to have the privilege of the friendship of some of the foremost citizens of Liverpool, and of seeing them at work. It was not necessary to mention names, for names would rise unbidden to their thoughts. Many of those citizens had passed away, but others were happily still with them, engaged in carrying on public service. Of all of them he would say, as he once said of William Rathbone:

‘Simply to have known these men and seen them at work was in itself a civic education.’

In March, James had the Education Estimates to bring before the Education Committee, as the Chairman was very unwell; and there was a welcome decrease in the proposed expenditure owing to economies which were coming into force. Soon after, I went up to London with James, as his time was not likely to be wholly occupied, and we spent two delightful mornings visiting old churches and ancient schools, and in the evenings went to the theatres.

In May we went abroad for three weeks’ holiday, and went to Berlin and Dresden, Alick Cameron coming with us. James was in great spirits; he was delighted to have Mr. Cameron, and he had himself only once before been to Berlin, and we all looked forward to it immensely.

Berlin was thronged with people, and we stayed in one of the fine hotels in the great ‘Unter den Linden.’ This street and the city altogether looked at its best. The trees had burst into the most lovely green, not yet too thick to hide their graceful outlines. The military element was everywhere to the front, and officers in pale blue uniforms and blue cloaks and shining swords swept in and out of the Hotel continually with a grand air of assurance, the ladies of their acquaintance bowing low before them and receiving their honoured salutes. Mr. Cameron was immensely entertained and could hardly be persuaded to leave the Hotel. We stayed there four days, going to a great performance of Beethoven’s *Leonora* at the Opera House and to a great Protestant Service on Sunday in the Lutheran Church, where everybody was hustled about and told to do this and that in true military fashion. We took a walk afterwards into the more hidden parts of the city and came across the great steel barges so much written of in England just then, which were

drawn up in long lines on the canals and were said to be so capacious as to hold huge numbers of horses and men when needed in war time. Whether they were there for this purpose or not we could not tell, but there the barges were.

Some of the most interesting things we saw in the Museums were the original Botticelli illustrations of Dante's Divine Comedy ; they were kept in portfolios and we sat at tables to examine them.

During the visit James and Mr. Cameron visited the great Technical School at Charlottenberg, as James had a special introduction to the Director. He was much surprised to come across no Professor there who could speak English, but James, who was at the time studying the German language with much enthusiasm, was able to carry on the necessary conversation with the various Professors and get all the information wished for, and was much complimented by them on his good German. At Dresden we spent nine days, going to the opera every evening, and going out between the acts onto the large open balconies of the Opera House where we could see far along the great river, with its life and lights, the moon streaming across its moving waters. It was a delightful and interesting holiday, and Mr. Cameron wrote afterwards to James : ' You have opened my eyes to a world I knew of, but had not realised. I have never had a happier time.'

James came back refreshed and ready for work, and a day or two after his return went to see Stonyhurst College, where he was immensely interested in the system of education carried out there.

On June 20th, a great Coronation Reception and Ball took place at the Town Hall in Liverpool, and on Coronation Day, the 22nd, there was a School Children's Pageant in both Wavertree and Sefton Parks, and on the 23rd a great garden party at

Calderstones Park. It was a wonderful summer, so many garden parties, so many festal gatherings.

In the Coronation list of Honours came to everyone's joy Vice-Chancellor Dale's knighthood and that of many another friend also. It was a great joy to James.

In July Mr. Robert Gladstone received the great honour of the Freedom of the City of Liverpool, and in thanking James for his congratulations he wrote : ' It is pleasant to call to mind the early days of our University College, when you and I with others did what we could in planting and nursing the acorn which has become an oak—and as the old song has it.

‘ Still flourish he a hale old tree
When a thousand years have gone.’



Mowll & Morrison

CHAPTER V

1911—1919

ON June 27th, 1911, a beautiful Memorial Tablet to Mr. Charles Jones, designed and executed by Mr. Allen, was unveiled at the University by Sir John Brunner. James presided over the ceremony. In his opening words he said : ‘ It has been subscribed for, not only by friends in the University, but by a number of past and present students also, in order that his memory, dear to so many of them, may be preserved in a tangible form in the University of which he was so proud and to which he was so great a friend.’ He went on to sketch the long years of interest and help which Mr. Charles Jones had given to the University and the loving interest he had taken in the life of the students themselves, and how he had had the idea which few at that time had expressed, even if they had cherished it—that to University students not only classes and lectures and examinations were necessary but corporate life as well, especially in athletics. He fostered that part of the life of the College and the University, and the fine pavilion which was now in use at the University playing fields at Calderstones, and also the playing fields themselves, they owed to his generosity. ‘ Those who had known Mr. Chas. Jones,’ he said, ‘ respected his singular directness and sincerity, his courage, and above all his kindness to all whom he had the opportunity of helping.’

In August of 1911 the General Strike took place, and lasted many weeks. It was an extremely responsible and anxious time for James. Two of

his partners were away on holiday. The Chairman of the Education Committee was also away, and in his capacity as a magistrate, he was called upon to take an active part in the arrangements for the protection of the city and for the feeding of the citizens also. Much rioting took place, and food supplies were constantly being stopped. The Mersey Railway had to be closed for some time, and afterwards when it was partially opened, it had to be closely guarded. The men who took the ferry boats across were guarded by men-of-war stationed on the river, and slept on their boats at night under the protection of the warships.

It was an immensely anxious time, and James worked at the Town Hall daily, being one of a small Committee who, under the Lord Mayor, ruled the city for the time being, and made arrangements for its defence and safety. I remember he carried a copy of the Riot Act in his pocket all through those long and terrible weeks, as, being a magistrate, he was liable at any time to be called out to read it if serious rioting occurred.

When all was quiet again, and the strike over, my mother came to stay with us, and I cannot help writing a few words on this visit because it seems to illustrate a very wonderful sympathy in James's character. My mother was then some years over 80, and her thoughts were often wandering back into the past and away from the present. James had known many people she had known in Liverpool in past days, and he would delight her so often by joining in these backward rambles, helping her to remember again people and places she had known and things that had happened in those far back times. During her visit, he proposed we should take her some Saturday afternoon to see in Rodney Street in Liverpool the house where she had been to school, and Blackburne

House garden where she remembered often playing when a little girl. Many other things he found to show her, and the afternoon was a very happy one. In September Miss Fanny Calder went with us to Switzerland, and I know how often she, too, was touched by his constant sympathy with and care of her.

That autumn the Prize Distributions at the Secondary Schools began early. In October, Mr. and Mrs. Birrell and their son came to stay with us, Mr. Birrell distributing the prizes and making a memorable speech at the Collegiate School, where he received a rousing welcome. Almost all the schools had their Prize Distributions before the year closed, and James, I think, presided at them all. At the Aigburth Vale School, he spoke with much pride of the growth of the school, which three years before had begun with 70 pupils and now had a membership roll of 208. The first government inspection, he said, had taken place during the last May, and the inspectors had prophesied in their report a distinguished future for the School, adding 'that it was a valuable asset to the city, and that the provision of educational facilities of this high quality was a strong testimony of civic forethought and public spirit.'

During this year, 1911-12, Lord and Lady Derby were Lord Mayor and Lady Mayoress of Liverpool, and during their time of office much was done to bring the University and the city into closer touch with one another. When presiding at the University Court just after he became Lord Mayor, Lord Derby called attention to his unique position that day, in having as Lord Mayor to welcome himself as Chancellor, and added that he ventured to hope that the combination for one year of the two positions in one individual might be a happy augury of continued good relations between the Corporation and the

University, and said that everything he could do would be done to cement the friendship still closer.

James also continued his efforts constantly in this direction. In March, a Committee of the Board of Education sitting on Government grants to Universities came down to Liverpool to inspect the University, and during their stay he invited them to one of his Exchange Club Dinners to meet the University and business men of the city.

During the early part of 1912, James was elected Vice-Chairman of the London and Lancashire Fire Insurance Co., the Board of which he had joined a few years earlier.

It was in this spring that we went to Florence for a short holiday. The weather was stormy and cold, and the winds of April swept down upon us, and the dust rose and the Florentine horses went about in their red coats, but for all that we enjoyed it greatly, and James came back refreshed and vigorous.

Soon after his return a special meeting of the University Court took place, at which he presided, and he brought forward from the Council two very important Statutes which were passed by the Court. One was for a Joint Matriculation Board for the Northern Universities, which had now been agreed to by the other Universities, and the other, a proposal to accept the new system introduced by the Board of Education, by which it was made possible to lengthen the course of the students in the Training College from 3 to 4 years, the fourth year being given entirely to training in professional subjects, and the first three years to the degree course, the Board of Education having adjusted the grants that they made to those students for maintenance, and for the cost of their education, so as to meet these conditions.

In June of this year, 1912, a great sorrow came to us. Our dear friend and minister, Mr. Watson, died

very suddenly in Scotland, where he had gone to spend a few days with some old friends at Dumbarton before receiving an Honorary Degree from Glasgow University a few days later.

His ministry had been a very wonderful one, his influence touching all kinds and conditions of people and extending very far beyond his devoted congregation in Oxtou. I do not think James ever felt any loss more; he was a very great friend, and as time went on he felt it more deeply still, and the blank was to him never filled.

In reading through letters of all kinds which came to James during this year, it is amazing to realise the big interests and responsibilities, and the innumerable smaller and more personal interests which filled his life at this time. How he got through his work puzzled many people; he certainly worked unceasingly. The University absorbed an increasing amount of time, as, being President of the Council, most things of importance came before him, and he and Sir Alfred Dale were in daily intercourse, often lunching together when no other time could be arranged for meeting. Those interested in the various departments of the University came, first one and then another, to talk things over with James and get his views upon them. Then there was his other education work, especially his Secondary Education work, to which he was still giving so much of his best thought and time, and which had grown up under his hand as it were, and the threads of which he held so firmly and knew so intimately, and guarded so jealously from any possibility of narrowness or exclusiveness of any kind, and from anything that lowered the possibility of the highest standards morally and mentally being reached. He had worked for years that these great schools should be established, and he watched eagerly now to see

that every door was kept wide open for any boy or girl to pass in who had the capacity and will to work for them.

He was a member of the Board of Municipal Corporations—work which dealt largely with the country's interests. He was on all kinds of boards and committees from time to time, dealing with first one thing and then another ; he went to meetings and dinners where responsible speaking had to be done, and the prize distributions and concerts that he attended and took part in were numerous and exacting at the end of his long full days. But he was always ready to take part in things, and social intercourse of every kind was a great pleasure to him. He was interested in people, and in their different ways of thinking, and had great sympathy with work of all kinds. Directly anyone was doing anything or interested in anything, he was interested too, and it was the greatest pleasure to him to meet them. He often said the change from one subject to another, and one interest to another, refreshed and rested him. But as time went on, there was no doubt about it, he took cold more often and he did not pick up rapidly ; he was working at full speed, keenly interested in everything, and the years went flying by, and though the Director, Mr. Legge, and Mr. Cameron, and the Registrar of the University and very many others tried to relieve him in every way they could, that the pressure of his public work might be less, it was only too evident that work gathered round him as the years went by instead of diminishing.

He was, too, a peace-maker. In the great concerns under his authority, he came in contact with men of very different ways of thinking and of working, many of them full of enthusiasm for the University, the School, or the work of the Committee

on which they served, but unable to pull together, working differently, thinking differently, and it happened constantly that either one or often both would seek his help, to see if some satisfactory way of progressing could be found. He was fair-minded, his judgment was trusted, and he was always ready to hear things from different points of view, and to listen to arguments even if he differed with them. He kept an open mind ready to find and acknowledge something helpful, even in those most opposed to him, if once he saw it was there, and he *did* smooth many rough places and did help to carry many a great work through, by his patience, his courtesy and his fair dealing.

About this time a German Society was started in Liverpool by Professor Petsch, and James joined it and was an enthusiastic member. They met in the Royal Institution and papers were read in German, and discussions held afterwards. At this time James was studying German in all sorts of odd moments at home, and always while dressing in the morning, and generally had a German novel on hand.

In November he presided at the Collegiate Prizegiving, and four days later was at the Holt School, when Sir Alfred and Lady Dale gave the address and prizes. It was at this meeting that James, in speaking of Mr. Bailey, the Headmaster, said: 'he is a master who, without neglecting any of the work of teaching inside the School, yet has very wide interests outside,' and added that he had often thought that if ever he were to be shipwrecked on a desert island, he could not find a better companion for his solitude than Mr. Bailey. 'The Headmaster would discover where to find the cocoanuts and shellfish; he would know how to build a house out of very unpromising materials,

and if the savages came upon the island he would know how to tame them and make them servants instead of enemies ; and when tired of this existence, would plan a flying machine to lead them back to old England.' This was an allusion to an aeroplane which the boys of the Holt School had built, and on which they hoped to fly. In the next *Holt Magazine* there was an amusing illustration of James as Robinson Crusoe, with half a cocoanut on his head, and Mr. Bailey sitting beside him and the Holt aeroplane just arriving to rescue them.

In December, 1912, James was re-elected President of the Council of the University and Pro-Chancellor for a second three years, and a few weeks before this he had again been re-elected Deputy-Chairman of the Education Committee.

At the meeting of the University Court, he strongly supported Sir John Brunner's appeal for money to extend the Chemical laboratories, which were already over filled, and which with the new impetus given by the recent appointment of Professor Baly, were sure to grow to a very large extent in the next few years, more especially in the department of honours students and research students. It was true, he said, of every University that the more it was successful the more money it would need. An institution which was losing ground might not require money for equipment, new buildings and new departures in work, but an ever-growing institution like the University would always require fresh money. Liverpool University, he continued, might claim a special meed of credit for the institution of a four years' course for those intending to enter the teaching profession. In this matter, as in so many others, Liverpool had been the pioneer or at any rate one of the few pioneers of a movement which was destined to have very great and beneficial

consequences. Students at the Training Colleges in the past had been subject to quite undue pressure. When reading for a degree, they had also been obliged to undergo professional training. The result had been, either that they had not had time to take full benefit of the University course by going in for an honours degree, or that they had been overstrained. Now, through an alteration in the Board of Education regulations, it was possible in the University Day Training College to extend the period to four years, the first three years being devoted to academic work, which no longer need debar the student from going in for honours, while the last year contained nearly the whole of the professional work which had to be done by the student as part of his course. This was a wonderful step in advance, destined to increase the efficiency not only of the elementary but the secondary teacher.

In the evening of this same day, James was present at the Annual Dinner of the Liverpool University Engineering Students' Society, and proposed the principal toast, 'The Engineering Profession.'

He pointed to the wonderful discoveries of science, in electricity and in physics, during the past 10 years, discoveries which had made it necessary for engineers to enlarge their scope of learning to a considerable extent. It was the engineer who had to apply all the new knowledge which science was building up for us in this country and all over the civilised world, and it was the engineer who had made electricity so great a power and had harnessed it to the service of mankind.

The Engineering profession was always learning, and he said he considered that it was one of the noblest professions to which any man could belong, and for which any University could prepare one. It was a privilege to him to be amongst those

who were striving—he thought with some success—to provide the teaching and the laboratories by means of which the young men of Liverpool and neighbourhood might take advantage of the latest results of science and engineering, and might go forth into the world a credit not only to the city and the University, but to the nation.

On December 5th, he attended the Aigburth Vale Prize Distribution, and on the 9th the University Club Dinner and Debate on American Politics, and before Christmas came was at many other dinners and prize distributions.

Early in 1913, James and I began to gather together some of Mr. Watson's sermons for publication. It was a long piece of work, as the sermons were extremely difficult to read, though apparently exquisitely written, and in addition to the difficulty of the writing, Mr. Watson used innumerable shortenings for words, which had completely baffled others who had tried before we did.

However, in the end, with the aid of a key to these shortenings which Mr. Watson had once made for us, we were able to read and afterwards make copies of the sermons we chose, and during a short visit to Bournemouth, we finally put together the volume, and in June arranged for its publication by Messrs. Nesbitt. At Kitzbühel in the North Tyrol a month or two later, we corrected the proof sheets and sent them back to the printer. Sir Alfred Dale took a very great interest in this book. Before it went to the publishers he went through the manuscript for us, and when it was published in October, wrote a delightful review of it in the *Daily Post*, and some time afterwards told us what a pleasure the sermons were to him, and that he thought the volume altogether a great success. I think it gave much pleasure not only to those who knew and loved Mr.

Watson, but to many besides who did not know him.

In March, 1913, James again brought forward the Education Estimates in the City Council, Mr. Oulton being very unwell, and everyone very anxious about him. It was a busy spring, and even during his short holiday in Bournemouth with the book also on hand, James had to leave to attend meetings both in London and Liverpool.

In September, 1913, when we returned from the North Tyrol, Mr. Oulton, the Chairman of the Education Committee, was seriously ill and on September 27th he died. He and James had much affection for one another; they had worked together for education in the closest way and through many long years, and James felt his loss keenly.

Great changes were indeed slowly coming nearer, and though we did not dream it then, we came home that September from our last holiday abroad.

All through this year, 1913, a great variety of work filled James's life. Many important subjects were being discussed, and he was in the thick of these discussions, and taking a leading part in them.

At a house-dinner and conference at University Club early in the year, he was asked to take the Chair, when the relations of the secondary school and the University were to be discussed, a subject which at that time was before a Committee of Senate. Endless requests came to him, and he welcomed them gladly and joined whenever it was possible in these discussions. He enjoyed grappling with interesting and difficult questions, and was ready to deal with them as they came along. About this time the question of the feeding of school children, and the best way of dealing with defective children, and in the University the question of the School of

Architecture and the new Arts Building, and many more private and difficult questions, were being dealt with by him. He was busy also over bills in Parliament and law cases which were often taking him to London, for he had not by any means given up his business as a solicitor. In July he wrote to me from London that he had had two consultations with Counsel as well as being in Court over two cases on both days, and it was on this visit to London that he attended one evening a very interesting banquet at the Ritz Hotel, to meet the Sudan Exploration Committee and several explorers, and had to reply to the toast of the Liverpool University.

On a later visit to London on education business, he wrote to me that before he left Liverpool for London he had had that same afternoon to speak at a meeting at the Sheltering Homes, and to speak at two education meetings, and afterwards at a University Finance Committee.

In August, 1913, he accepted the Chairmanship of the Education Sub-Committee of the Association of Municipal Corporations, which held their meetings in London.

In these last years, I find many letters to James from people working at education in the city or in some branch of the University; some full of gratitude for a word of appreciation of their work, spoken by him at some meeting or committee, many thanking him for great help in time of perplexity and difficulty, and other letters from those who were leaving Liverpool, and who had long worked in touch with him; letters full of appreciation, affection, and gratitude. Many people brought their schemes and plans of all kinds to him before they made them public, that they might have the benefit of his judgment and suggestions, and as time went on more and more people came to him for advice as to

their careers and training, and often as to the course to be taken for their children's education.

On November 12th, 1913, James was unanimously elected Chairman of the Liverpool Education Committee, in Mr. Oulton's place, an almost full attendance of members being present. The congratulations he received afterwards were very warm and hearty, and amongst them came a beautiful letter from Mrs. Oulton, saying how earnestly her husband had hoped that James might succeed him in the Chairmanship.

So he went on gathering work as he went, and in November he accepted a warm invitation to be Chairman of the University Club, but this Chairmanship came at a difficult time, and he became with others during the year so absorbed in the country's welfare, that he was never able to do for the Club what he would like to have done.

At the Prize Distribution at the Holt Secondary School in November, the Headmaster made a strong protest against the practice of large commerical bodies in the city fixing such an age as the maximum for the engagement of young clerks, as to induce boys and girls to leave school with an immature education. James spoke warmly, as he always did, in support of everything being done to keep boys and girls at school as long as possible, insisting that it was always these years, 16 and 17, which were more important to a boy's and a girl's education than any two years that come before that age.

Three days later, at another Prize Distribution, Sir James Hope Simpson advocating also a longer training at the Secondary Schools, announced that in the banks now, those boys who had stopped on at the Secondary Schools, and passed recognised examinations, were given a higher position on entering the bank than they would otherwise have had. This

is what James had so earnestly advocated in his address to bankers and others in 'The Education of a Business man,' and it was in all ways very satisfactory to find the thing now actually being done, and it was one of the many great improvements carried out by Sir James Hope Simpson to help forward education in Liverpool.

At a meeting at the University at the end of the year, a branch of the Victoria League was founded in Liverpool, which was to aim at helping people in all parts of the Empire to know more of one another. James presided, and spoke of Liverpool as being in touch with all parts of the Empire, and as being an especially favourable place in which to start a branch of the League.

The year 1914 was to bring events that would shake the whole world, but it came in quietly enough, and few people took much notice of occasional rumours which rose and fell, that the army was in a deplorable condition, and ought to be re-organised and strengthened, and the protection of our ports and coasts made more secure.

James was busier than ever, working at very high pressure all the time, and I was often warned and often very anxious about him, but was quite unable to stay his work even had I had the heart to do so. There was that in him which looked into the future and was for ever seeing better work still waiting to be done, and he pressed forward towards it with never slackening zeal and with a self-forgetfulness which grew as time went on. He had no personal ends in view. He saw straight in front of him, the work to be done, and felt the power to do it, and having put his hand to the plough, he never turned back or faltered. He still held the Chairmanship of Secondary Education for some months, as well as the Chairmanship of the Education Committee, and

was President of the University Council and Pro-Chancellor. He was also carrying on to a certain extent his professional work as a lawyer, and in this spring of 1914 had several cases on in London, as well as an Education Bill. He saw the 'Educational Ladder' which he had for so long talked of and worked to establish, now an actual reality, and for a time he was in the wonderful position of holding the reins of leadership, in the three departments of education, in his hands at one time.

In the spring of 1914, many changes were taking place in the University. Professors were leaving, and the vacant chairs had to be filled, and many departments in the University were being developed, re-organised and re-housed. The Veterinary School, the School of Architecture, and the School of Town Planning were amongst these, and in June the new Arts Building was opened by Lord Bryce, and in all these things James took an active part and his opinion was much sought after. He was interested and active too in the Memorial to Sir Rupert Boyce, which was unveiled during this spring, and he was also much interested in the proposed Memorial to Mr. Oulton.

It was in this spring, too, that the Inter-University Sports were organised, and it was arranged that a big meeting should take place once a year alternately in Manchester, Liverpool, and Leeds. Before Professor Abell left the University for his new post in London, he and James presented to the Inter-University Sports the two Championship Cups, and later, when the first great meeting took place in Manchester, James's Cup was won by Liverpool, and brought back in triumph to the University.

Before Easter James was laid up again with one of his severe colds, and was ordered away for a change, and we went down to the Victoria Hotel at

Sidmouth, a singularly peaceful spot. When Easter came, Mr. Alick Cameron joined us, and we spent a happy Easter time walking and motoring through the lovely country round, where the deep Devonshire lanes were gay with primroses. Unfortunately we were called to Harrow Weald through my sister's sudden illness, and I had to be left there for eight weeks to take care of my mother, and James returned home alone, but at the end of May I was at home again, and a busy, active summer followed.

At the end of July, on the eve of our Swiss holiday, we spent a few very interesting days in London, also holiday making, attending a family wedding in the country beyond Windsor, and visiting many old friends round London we had not seen for years. We also attended a very interesting banquet given by Mr. Robert Mond at the Ritz Hotel to the Sudan Exploration Committee and explorers, and James again, as in the year before, replied to the toast, 'The Liverpool University.' When the speeches were over, the guests turned round their chairs, and saw thrown upon the sheet the actual scenes where some of the most interesting discoveries had been made. Amongst other things we saw the fine and perfect bronze bust of Cæsar being lifted from its sandy resting place in the ruins of Meroe.

This dinner took place on Monday, July 27th, and the night before we had been startled to see on a placard that war had been declared between Austria and Serbia, and the possibility expressed of other countries being drawn in.

A few days later we were to start for Grimmelalp, in Switzerland, and James smiled at me for suggesting we should put this off. 'It will be all right,' he said, 'something will be done; it is impossible that war to any serious extent can take place;' but a week later the whole face of things was changed, and not

only France, but our own England, had declared war against Germany, who had thrown all treaties to the wind, and was defiantly endeavouring to cross Belgium, mercilessly destroying and killing as she marched.

During the first few days after the Declaration of War, it was difficult to realise the great change which had come over everything, and to know what to do, but James in a day or two was quite clear that for us the best thing was to take a holiday, and *at once*, and near at hand, so that he might be fresh and able to cope with the difficulties that most certainly would increase as time went on and when the schools and University re-opened. He would go to some place within call of Liverpool, and be ready to return at any moment if necessary.

In a few days we went to Harrogate. The hotel, when we arrived, was in great excitement; the manager, the hall porter, the waiters, and the cook had been carried off in the night to York Castle; they were all Germans. The poison scare had risen and the reservoirs, at Harrogate as elsewhere, were being closely guarded and watched. Two days later, the German hotel staff was brought back from York Castle, and the hotel went on as usual. A large number of the guests, however, left, expecting to be poisoned by the German cook, but James would not hear of such a thing, and we stayed three weeks, a Prussian waiting on us in our sitting-room, and giving us lively descriptions of the amazing kindness he had received in York Castle, or the 'Festung' as he called it.

It was a horrible time, but I think we did the wisest thing under the circumstances. James had a much needed change and fresh air, as we were out whenever possible all day long; but it was a ghastly time, everyone wondering whatever would happen

next, and papers and rumours of all kinds coming in continually. James was often kept busy writing, as many were writing to him, and he was thinking out plans for the future. Once he returned to Liverpool, as the question of taking the schools for hospitals had already arisen.

As the days and months went by that autumn, he grew more and more absorbed in the endless new questions which arose every day. As time went on his own office staff grew smaller, as the clerks volunteered nobly for the front, and were encouraged and helped to go, and gradually he took on more office work himself.

In the education world, the difficulties were very great, and it became at the same time of greater importance than ever that the education of the children should not suffer. The school buildings were taken away right and left and made into hospitals, and they were handed over willingly; but the arrangements that had to be made instead were complicated and difficult, and often the double shift system had to be used, the children only getting half a day in the schools, but being taken to museums or for field walks for the other half day if no school buildings were available, and if anyone could be found to take the children out and interest and teach them.

In the University, not only Professors and Lecturers were going to the war, and on war work, but large numbers of students also were volunteering for the front, and Liverpool University had a noble record of patriotism. All these things absorbed James's interest and thought continually. Early and late he was thinking out and discussing endless important questions, as they came up, on new situations everywhere, and trying to help to solve them. He was present and spoke at many of the

inaugural patriotic meetings in those early days of the war. On September 3rd, he spoke at an enthusiastic meeting of University students at the Union, saying that the nation was fighting the battle of national honour and national existence, after the greatest peace-maker in Europe, Sir Edward Grey, had striven to avert hostilities. 'It is going to be a strenuous war,' he said, 'but we are going to win; I envy you the prospect of taking a part in so noble an enterprise. Years hence, you will look back with pride and delight at having had a share in the triumph of liberty throughout Europe.' At this same meeting, which took place hardly a month after war had been declared, it was announced that already 50 Engineering students had sailed with the Lancashire Fortress Royal Engineers, and that large numbers of other students had joined the Territorials, the Royal Army Medical Corps and the A.S.C., as well as Lord Derby's Comrades' Battalions.

At the Education Committee on September 28th, it was passed without discussion that classes for adults and boys in rifle shooting at miniature rifle ranges should be established; the Liverpool Committee being the first to start this idea, which became so general later. At this same meeting, James suggested that the children in the schools everywhere should have the causes of the war explained to them, and at a later meeting he said: 'The Committee want the children to know that this country has been forced into this war, in order to defend the weak and to protect the heritage of liberty so long and happily enjoyed.' He also spoke with great enthusiasm of the active co-operation which the Committee had received in these difficult times from the teachers, the office staff, and the caretakers, in carrying out the feeding of school children, which had become in many cases so necessary,

and also in many other special undertakings which it had been thought wise and useful to set going; and said that all this extra help had been given when their duties had already been rendered the heavier because many of their members had joined the colours, while their loyalty and self-sacrifice were further shown by the fact that their contributions to the War Relief Funds exceeded £6,000 a year. He said he was proud to be the Chairman of a Committee whose staffs were working so loyally.

On November 23rd James announced to the Education Committee that 132 teachers employed by the Committee had joined the colours, and in addition 18 caretakers, 23 clerks, 12 visitors, two doctors and one inspector, making a total of 188; and that a letter had been received from the War Office which stated: 'I am to request that you will convey to your Committee the Army Council's appreciation of the assistance rendered by the Education Committee of Liverpool in granting facilities to its employees to serve in the military forces during the present emergency.'

In October James had been laid up for a few days with a severe cold, and was unable to preside at the Collegiate School Prize Distribution, and the Headmaster wrote: 'It is difficult for me to express how much I regret to hear that you will not be with us to-morrow night, and give us, and especially to me, your very helpful and cheering presence and words of encouragement. I know it is also a great disappointment to the Staff and to the School, who know your untiring interest and thought for this little community.' Whenever he was laid up for a day or two kind letters like this came to him often from the Director, or Mr. Cameron, never bothering him if it was possible to help it, but keeping him in touch with his many interests and making him feel

how much his guidance and presence was missed amongst them, and how warmly he would be welcomed back when he was better. As the years went by, these friendships deepened, and in so many thoughtful, tender ways, they thought for him, relieved him and helped him.

I think in these early days of the war, that one of the things James tried hardest to do, was to keep down excitement and carry on education in Liverpool, difficult as it was to do so, in as far as possible its normal course, always keeping before his mind the increased necessity at this time for the young life of our country to be developed and trained to fill as time went on the great gaps that must come through the war, and to keep the children's minds fixed on their school interests and pleasures to counteract the excitement which was of necessity present in most homes at the time. Everything that could be done to keep the children happy and steadily at work *was* done, and as far as possible, their concerts and interests of all kinds were kept going.

At the University things were growing more difficult; the number of students was rapidly decreasing, and with them the Government Grant, and with all the pride the University felt in the numbers of students, lecturers, and professors who were offering themselves to the army and to special war work, those who were left to manage and carry on the University saw, with growing anxiety, that its financial position was becoming more and more involved.

In December, Lord Mersey (Mr. Justice Bigham) wrote to James: 'I hear that your University will probably be in want of funds for the current expenses of the next year, and that you are getting together some money to meet this deficiency. If this is so, I shall be glad to send you a donation;' and on the 17th, he

wrote again: 'It was a great pleasure to me to receive your kind letter. All England knows by this time what a distinguished part Liverpool has played in the war, and it makes me proud of my native city. She has given an example which other cities should not be slow to follow. I do not anticipate a speedy termination of the war, and if I should unfortunately be right, and as a consequence, further difficulties come to the University, you must let me know.'

At the meeting of the University Court in Nov., 1914 James as Pro-Chancellor presided, Lord Derby being absent on military matters. After the passing of the reports, James announced that no fewer than 47 members of the teaching staff, 22 of the office staff and University servants, and 217 students had already joined various branches of the army and navy, and that in addition, a very large number of men who intended to enter the University in the previous month had been prevented from doing so by the fact that they too had joined the army. Those remaining in the University were also doing their part. Many of them had been distinctly told it was their duty to remain, in order to continue their education to fit them to become medical men or veterinary surgeons. These students who had remained had voluntarily formed themselves into a Training Corps, and were busy drilling every week. The students had sacrificed a great deal, and it was the duty, he said, of the authorities to make that sacrifice as easy as possible. The time occupied in military service it was proposed should be counted as time spent in the class-rooms of the University. During the year, the new Arts Building had been opened, and they were looking forward next year to the opening of the new School of Tropical Medicine, which was rapidly approaching completion, and it was a matter of very great advantage to the University

that with the new Tropical School close to their doors, there was also a new Tropical Ward instituted in the Royal Infirmary, so that research and practical clinical study could be continued under far more favourable conditions than was possible in the past. The next new building to which they were looking forward was the School of Architecture and Town Planning, which they owed to Sir William Lever. In speaking of the losses sustained by the University during that year, he spoke of Mr. Alfred Booth, one of the oldest members of the Council and one of the founders of the University, and of his brother-in-law, Mr. Philip Holt, who had done so much for Liverpool, and done it so quietly.

A few days later James wrote 'An Appreciation of Mr. Philip Holt,' which came out in the *Daily Post*, and he began it with these words: 'It seems an anomaly to write of the public life of one who shunned publicity and took unusual precautions to avoid it. Yet surely a life in which great ability, ripe judgment, and discriminating generosity, were for half a century continuously devoted to the good of our city was a public life in the truest sense.'

During the early months of 1915 many educational addresses and gatherings took place, and amongst them, James delivered the prizes and gave an address at 'The Oakes Institute,' a private school at Walton where the boys held a fine mathematical record; which school, at a later time, was taken over by the Education Committee, and became the nucleus of the Alsop High School.

As 1915 went on, James's whole heart was set on keeping the interest in education keenly alive in spite of the war, and on not allowing it to suffer more than was necessary from the gaps in the teaching staff and the difficulties in supplying school buildings. He

was supported in every possible way by his Committee, especially by Mr. Sydney Jones, now Chairman of Secondary Education, in all these earnest endeavours ; and the Director and Assistant Director, Mr. Legge and Mr. Cameron, and the education staff generally, made enormous endeavours to keep everything up to a high standard of efficiency, and support and relieve James in every way they could in his anxious and responsible position, with the difficulties arising from the war on every side. James's desire for individuality, especially in the Secondary Schools never slackened ; he had them each individually in his heart, and was ever ready to sympathise with and welcome the endeavours of their head masters and mistresses to advance the best interests of education in their individual schools. He was, I believe, always recognised not only as a wise guide on whom they could lean for true help and guidance, but always, too, as a real friend with the keenest interest for their welfare deep in his heart. -

During that awful spring of 1915, when we were all watching relatives and friends going forth to the war, and still the Germans seemed advancing and the awful complications both in the West and in the East increasing, in the midst of all this growing anxiety and bravery and distress, still James and many others with him, went on steadily and persistently working early and late to keep things at the University, the Secondary Schools, and the Elementary Schools, in as far as was possible their normal course ; and the work of the city too, that it might not fall behind in those difficult times.

In March, James was in London attending the meetings of the Association of Municipal Corporations, and wrote to me of the darkness of the streets, though he assured me that they were not as dark as our own road at home, where many a time he was unable, in

spite of luminous paint on the gate posts, to find our gate at night.

In March, a festival concert of Liverpool school children was held in St. George's Hall, and large numbers of children took part. There was also about the same time a great distribution of attendance rewards, and later the Lord Mayor entertained these good attendance scholars at the Town Hall. In April came again the Good Friday performance of 'The *Messiah*' in St. George's Hall, for the very poor of Liverpool. Indeed, all through the year many things were done to interest the children in their work and to soothe the hard times for those who were left anxious and desolate at home.

In May, we spent a week at Grasmere, the weather being most perfect, and it seemed so peaceful and lovely that we took a house there for August, and brought my mother and sister and my married sister, Mrs. Wyatt, and her boy with us. They were all lonely and anxious, and it was well to be together in those sad days.

Early in 1916, a local Military Tribunal was set up in Liverpool, and such tribunals gradually became instituted throughout the country, but one of the very first to begin work was the Liverpool Tribunal. Sir Charles Petrie, who was elected Chairman, fell ill before, I think, it had started, and retired from the Chairmanship, and James was invited to take it, and through the time of its organisation and through the first year or two of its heaviest work, he attended this tribunal many days a week and worked at it unceasingly. In a sense it became a pioneer tribunal, and it was not uncommon for representatives from other tribunals starting in other towns to visit the Liverpool one to gain knowledge of how things were carried on there, and it grew to have an influence on and to make a pattern for other tribunals, which was

recognised extensively outside Liverpool. I think it would have been impossible for anyone to have felt the responsibility of his position as Chairman more keenly than James felt it. From the first, he was determined that every man who came before the Tribunal should have a fair hearing; it was a matter of life and death for him; his difficulties were often genuine and excessive; and everything that could be done to help him to solve them should be done, and if his case had to be taken rapidly, it should be looked into fairly and judged without prejudice. The position of the country and the urgent need for men in the army, and *quickly*, was a responsibility which pressed heavily on James, and he was determined to exempt no man who could possibly be helped and encouraged to go. No work ever took so much out of him; he gave himself to it with an ardour and a determination which even for him was intense.

The Tribunal sat often day after day, and sometimes he would preside over it for four and five hours at a stretch, fifty men coming up before the Committee on one day, and when one thinks of the volume of other work he was guiding and handling outside this heavy tribunal work, it does not seem strange now, that when he got away in the summer of 1916, 1917, and 1918, to Capel Curig and Pen y Gwryd for a few weeks' rest, he should have attacks of alarming exhaustion which had never come to him before, and be absolutely unable to take the long walks he had so greatly enjoyed in past years without, after a mile or two, becoming sorely overdone. Indeed he never again was able to walk as he had done, and I cannot but think that with many another he gave his life in those years of the war.

In 1918, he gave up the Chairmanship of the Tribunal some months before the war ended. Much other work had crowded in upon him, and it had

become impossible any longer to attend the Tribunal meetings. His own office staff was greatly depleted and the last managing clerk and a partner had joined up, and as there was much anxious and important work going on, he was obliged to take up his professional work again, and not only advise but carry out the details also.

In a record of the days and hours when he personally presided over the Military Tribunal, I find many hundred of hours recorded, and these were only casual notes which may easily have been exceeded. The great boxes of papers and letters, too, received by him in connection with this work, bear their own witness to the keen interest he took in the men who came before him, and the trouble he took to help them to solve their difficulties and join up. They bear also very wonderful testimony to the confidence the military representatives placed in him, and to the fine feeling of trust and courtesy which grew up between them.

When the Tribunal had been going on some months, an agitation was got up in certain newspapers that the Tribunal was going too slowly, and on May 18, a public statement was made at the Tribunal that already over 10,000 appeals had been heard, and James gave a summary of the different classes of cases dealt with, and stated that 6,000 appeals remained still to be dealt with, and that there would no doubt be more when the new Military Service Act came into operation; but that many of the 6,000 cases would be cases to be dealt with by the Advisory Committee, and many others would be renewed appeals. Thus the number to be investigated by the Tribunal would be reduced substantially.

Colonel Kyffin Taylor, the Military Representative present, said he did not think the Tribunal was behind in its work.

Alderman Harford spoke warmly of the way the Chairman, Mr. Alsop, had conducted the proceedings. Criticisms, he said, had appeared in the Press that gave the impression that the Tribunal was rather lethargic. From the very beginning, he said, there had been great consideration given to the cases which came before the Tribunal, whether on the part of large employers of labour, or small tradesmen or working men. If that consideration and that sympathy had not been shown to every applicant by the Chairman, he was quite sure that the composed feeling which prevailed in the city with regard to the work would not exist, but that, on the contrary, they might have had a great deal of dissatisfaction. It would have been very easy for them to have dealt with three times the number of cases if the scamping spirit had got hold of them. Liverpool was, he supposed, one of the most important centres in the country in regard to the essentials in connection with the war, for it was a great carrying port. For that reason, they had to be very discriminating in the way they handled the cases.

James acknowledged the kind remarks made in respect to himself, and said they had done their best to see that, on the one hand, there should be no hardships, and that, on the other hand, every man who could be spared should be released for the army.

Early in this year, 1916, there was an excess of juvenile crime in Liverpool, and James, among his many occupations, joined a conference between magistrates of the city and the Education Committee, called together by Mr. Stuart Deacon, to consider the cause of this crime, and to try and find some remedy for it.

In February, James wrote a strong letter to the *Morning Post* welcoming the withdrawal by the Board of Education of their unfortunate proposals to force

on our Secondary Schools a State controlled system of examination. He says at the close of his letter: 'We shall all welcome the day when the Board will have at their disposal increased funds for assisting Higher Education, but one may express the hope that when that happy day arrives, these funds will not be used for the purpose of co-ordinating or standardising (in other words, of stereotyping and sterilising) Higher Education, or in applying compulsion to local education authorities in matters for which they (and not the Board) are by statute responsible to Parliament, and of which from their knowledge of local needs, local conditions, and local sentiment, they are the better judges. Indeed after the war, more rather than less elasticity in educational methods will be needed in order that the country may be able to deal effectively with the many new problems which are certain to arise.'

At this time, James expressed on various occasions a strong desire that a committee should be appointed independent of any Government Department, to consider the entire question of the organisation of our educational system, and in a letter he wrote to *The Times* on February 26th, he welcomed very heartily a letter in the same paper a day or so before in which Sir Philip Magnus advocated this same thing; and James adds: 'The matter is not one which can afford to wait until the conclusion of the war, and if we are to have fresh ideas on the subject, I venture to think that Sir Philip Magnus's suggestion that the committee should be independent of any Government department is essential.'

All through 1916, outside his heavy Tribunal work, many outstanding educational questions and rising needs received his vigorous thought and attention. In the first place, the whole outlook of education, he saw, was widening, as the war brought to light new

possibilities of educational development, the need of which had not before been fully, or in many cases, at all realised or thought about.

In addressing the Lancashire County Association of the National Union of Teachers in February, 1916, James spoke of the present time as one of great opportunity for all interested in education. Education like so many other things, he said, was on its trial. After the war, changes would be suggested, and let them hope many improvements would be made. We would learn a great deal from those who had fought our battles in the trenches. Their view of life, on education and on what mattered in this world, would be of outstanding importance. One of the things they had to learn from this war was that science must occupy in future a much more important position in education than it had up to the present time. It must be more closely linked up with industry, with commerce, with transit by land and by sea, and to a certain extent with the form of government.

At the Education Committee in March a resolution was moved by James, and passed by the Committee in his (their Chairman's) name: 'That it is desirable in the national interest that a Committee should be appointed to consider and report upon the entire question of the organisation of our educational system, and its adaptation to the various needs of the nation, and that such a Committee should be independent of any Government Department, and that a copy of this resolution be forwarded to the Prime Minister,' and this resolution was confirmed by the City Council later. 'There is no doubt,' James said, 'that after the war very important questions will arise with regard to physical education, vocational and scientific education, and the relation between education and the various trades of the country, and

also with regard to public questions. The Government has already acceded to the wish of bodies of traders, by appointing strong Committees to consider the position of trade after the war, and likewise they cannot be too soon in tackling the new problems in education which will present themselves.'

At the University, the advisability of having new and extensive chemical laboratories largely for research and post graduate work, was becoming a very urgent necessity, and it was becoming more and more clear that an appeal must be made for this special object. Professor Baly and Professor Robinson came out to Ulverscroft to discuss the problem with James, and Mr. Hugh Rathbone wrote an urgent letter to him about it, regretting he could not be present at the Exchange Club dinner which James was giving to bring together for discussion those most likely to be interested in this subject. Sir John Brunner came down from London to attend the dinner and stayed with us at Ulverscroft.

The growing need of these Chemical Laboratories which the war had emphasised so strongly, and the firm position which James took up in opposing the interference of the Board of Education in proposing a State controlled system of examination for Secondary Schools, became two of the outstanding features of his work during this busy year of 1916. Again and again, James wrote to *The Times*, and to other papers, opposing this suggestion of a stereotyped State control over his beloved Secondary Education, which, had it come about, would have robbed it of its free development on individual lines, through its endeavour to meet the pressing needs of the cities and localities themselves.

In Liverpool, where Secondary Education had developed and grown up in such a wonderful way and

on such high and noble lines, and through the enthusiastic and earnest work of its citizens, the opposition was extremely keen, and it was indeed so strong all over England, that in time the Government's proposition was dropped.

That spring and summer of 1916 we often had Mr. Cameron at Ulverscroft, and sometimes over the week-end, and he and James had long talks on education. The question of War Bonus was becoming urgent, and being pressed forward on every side not only for teachers but for all other employees of the Education Committee of the City Council. Prices everywhere were rising, and the difficulty of making ends meet was beginning to press very heavily on those who had small fixed incomes. James seemed never free from these urgent questions which were pressed upon him from every side, and when his long Tribunal and other meetings were over for the day, he had to set to work to tackle the War Bonus difficulties, which was a thorny path to tread. Often when he at last returned home late and very tired, he had to take up these questions after dinner and work all evening at them to be ready for important meetings on the following day.

It was a terrible spring and summer, disaster after disaster occurred at the front; the wounded were arriving in huge numbers and filling our hospitals, and almost every household seemed facing the loss of some precious life. It seemed as if the flower of the youth of the world was steadily and rapidly being mown down, and yet the spirit everywhere was so high, that in this great struggle for liberty and against oppression, and for the upholding of the sanctity of treaties, all murmuring was stilled, and one wondered sometimes if those who had lost so much had not been touched even more deeply by some radiant pride and hope.

On Sundays at Ulverscroft we often had relays of Red Cross nurses to spend the afternoon with us, and sometimes on Sunday winter evenings the N.C.O.'s would come in from a barracks near and enjoy a good fire and a smoke in a comfortable arm chair, and a good meal, and James would be wonderfully happy talking first to one and then another, and was often able to help them in some difficulty or anxiety. These men we seldom saw again ; they passed on so quickly to the front.

In September James got away to Llandudno and Capel Curig for a much needed rest, and from letters he received from those he had been working with in Liverpool, I gathered how intensely alive they were to the necessity of a rest for him after the extraordinarily heavy work of the year. The weather, however, was wet and stormy, and letters and work followed him. He never had a complete rest, and missed sadly the old holidays, when in high secluded valleys in Switzerland and Tyrol, he got away from his work and was braced up and rested.

For some time now, however, he had passed on to Mr. Sydney Jones the Chairmanship of the Secondary Schools Sub-Committee, but I remember still how keenly he felt this break and the loss of the special intimate touch with his old work and with each individual school which he had watched developing in its own special way under his Chairmanship ; but he was full of hope that under the wise and energetic Chairmanship of Mr. Sydney Jones, they would develop even more rapidly still, and would retain in full their strong individuality, and as Chairman of the Education Committee, he still had them in a less intimate way under his care.

At the Education Committee in November, James was again re-elected Chairman, and in returning thanks, spoke of the coming year as likely to be one

of stress and strain for the Committee, and for their Director and the office staff. He spoke of the request which had come from an important Government department that Mr. Cameron who was such an important member of their staff should be lent to them for the duration of the war, to fill a post of administrative responsibility in the Ministry of Munitions, as a man of his type was urgently required in the department. He spoke also of the increased appreciation of education in the country. The war, he said, was teaching many people who did not realise it before, the immense and ever-growing value of education. They knew the extent of that appreciation in Liverpool by the increased numbers, in spite of war time, in their secondary schools, in their evening schools, and in their modern language classes. The central Government, he continued, was obliged to call in the aid of local authorities, educational and others, far more than in the earlier stages of the war, and he referred to the class, for example, at the Technical School, for instructing women in the manufacture of the metal portions of the aeroplane. Then there was the interesting proposal made by the War Office to help in providing curative work for disabled soldiers, in order that they might get curative as well as educational benefit. Again he strongly brought before the Committee the great changes in educational administration which might quite possibly be brought about, hoping that, if that was so, the point they would all keep in mind was the immense value of *local control* in education. They ought not, he said, to have to go to London for this and that ; they ought not to have to prepare numerous statistics which occupied the time of teachers and clerks for the statistical department of the Board of Education. Such things ought to be simplified by a larger power being given to the

local education authority. Particularly, the larger County Boroughs like Liverpool should have greater freedom than they now had, and fewer restrictions.

Almost immediately after this meeting, the call came to Mr. Cameron and it was arranged for him to go, and he at once took up his responsible post at the Ministry of Munitions in London. He had been refused by the doctors earlier, for military service, and as time went on, the strain and stress of his heavy work in London told upon his health severely.

The country was in a grave condition, the enormous numbers of wounded and killed made it imperative that every man who could should serve and serve quickly. At the Education Committee at the close of November, a resolution was passed almost unanimously that in future during the continuance of the war, in appointments to teaching, administrative, and other posts under the Education Committee, a statement should be required in writing from all male applicants of military age, stating their service with the forces of the Crown, the date of offer of service or attestation prior to the Military Service Act, and the reasons which led to postponement of or abstention from service, if such occurred.

The numbers who had by this time joined the forces from the teaching and administrative departments of education in Liverpool were enormous, and every care was taken that their places should not be filled by any possible shirkers from the great fight, and in many cases, women filled these posts, or retired teachers came back who were unable to fight.

Before the year 1916 ended, at the meeting of the University Court, James, as Pro-Chancellor, stated that the Roll of Honour for the University stood up to date at 1257, and the death roll at 75.

He spoke later in the same speech of the great gifts which had come to the University, commemorating some of those who had fallen, notably the Chair of Geology founded by Professor and Mrs. Herdman in memory of their son, who had himself been an earnest student of nature, and deeply interested in scientific investigation. It had, he said, been a wonderful year for work and service, and he not only spoke of those professors, lecturers and students who had gone to the front or to war-service of some kind, but bore testimony also to those who had remained and whose loyalty to the University had been so great; their work had often been doubled, and had been carried on by them under great difficulties, and the economy which both the academic and the administrative staff had practised had gone far to keep the University out of any serious debt, though this also had been very greatly helped by the Treasury, who had come to their rescue with a special emergency grant of £7,500, which he hoped would cover the losses from other sources until the termination of the war. It was notable also in this speech that James already saw and spoke of the likelihood of large increases of students *after* the war, and pointed out the increased interest in education which was already showing itself in the larger numbers attending the Secondary Schools, in spite of the call for boy and girl labour, and the excellent wages offered. Both James and Professor Baly spoke of the work done by the University for the country and the city. The drugs which had formerly come from Germany they were now supplying from their own and other Universities, bringing the University into closer touch with Industry, which association no doubt would greatly develop after the war.

Later in December, James presided at a luncheon given by the Council of the University to a number

of prominent journalists associated with scientific and trade papers, who were visiting Universities in order to obtain first-hand knowledge of the work being done there.

In his speech to them, James spoke of commerce, and said: 'Shipping, the transport of goods, their purchase and distribution to other places—that is the great work of Liverpool. But while commerce is the City's main pursuit, there is one way in which the University has greatly helped commerce, and that is through the medical side. It has given new life and opportunities to commerce in tropical countries by its School of Tropical Medicine. It has made it possible for white men to live in tropical countries without loss of life or injuries or disease. In that respect he claimed that the Liverpool University had been a great aid to commerce.' He spoke also of the Chemical Industry which had been helped by the University. 'Great work,' he said, 'had been done in time of peace, and during the war they have been able to help the Government in many important departments. Thus the Liverpool University, while providing a liberal education for everyone, has paid special attention to local needs, and it is because the modern universities have felt that need and responded to it, that they are worthy of this examination and inspection.'

At this time, the Military Tribunal work was extremely heavy, and out of the first 18 days at the beginning of December, James presided on 10 of these days at the Tribunal, and each time for several hours.

His own office work at this time was claiming him, too, more and more, and the prospect of losing his special clerk and secretary in a few weeks' time was much on his mind. For years he had kept his papers, and in James's varied and busy work he had been a

constant help to him, and was a most devoted clerk to whom he was much attached.

This year, 1916, had been a greater strain on James than any of us realised, and the cold weather in the middle of December laid him up with bronchitis, which kept him at home for many weeks, and in January, venturing out too soon, he took another cold. In the midst of so much important work, these colds agitated him greatly, and I remember the doctor saying to me: 'I hardly dare to tell him he can't go out to-day, but he certainly must not do so.'

In February he was again hard at work at the Tribunal and other matters, but in March, fell ill again with another cold. He had constant letters from his friends and fellow-workers anxious about him for both private and public reasons, and begging him not to come out too soon. It was, however, impossible to keep him quiet, and his correspondence all the time was voluminous. In the morning, he would have a shorthand clerk beside his bed taking down letters and instructions, and in the afternoon I wrote for him, but the agitating conundrums that came for him to solve and the difficulties that arose through his absence and which he strove to clear up from his bed, made his convalescence often very prolonged. He was, too, watching very closely the speeches being made over the country by members of the Government on the hoped-for educational reforms. In January, Lord Haldane made two long speeches at Perth and Huddersfield, strongly advocating a curtailment of the powers of local education authorities, and calling these bodies weak and feeble, and deploring the condition of Secondary Education in the cities.

James was indignant and up in arms, and though he was ill, he wrote a very vigorous letter to *The*

Times Educational Supplement which they published at once, and which was an urgent plea that the question of educational areas should be publicly discussed before the Government committed itself to the drastic proposals outlined by Lord Haldane. He urged that the local education authorities should be consulted either directly or through the County Councils Association or the Association of Municipal Corporations, to one or other of which the large majority of them belonged, and urged also the necessity for a full and careful inquiry into the working of the present system of administration, and an equally careful scrutiny of that which was proposed and which seemed contrary to all English traditions. The letter was full of warmth and fire, and he asks : 'Is it true that our educational bodies are too small and too feeble? I hardly think that would be the opinion of those who have practical knowledge of the work which these bodies carry on. Certainly it is *not* true of the larger urban education authorities, and as regards the administrative counties, I am told that their present areas are in some cases considered to be already too large; surely the remedy is to enlarge their powers. Few will deny that under the great Act of 1902, immense progress has been made, and especially in higher education.' 'Is it true,' he asks again, 'as Lord Haldane states, that the state of Secondary Education in England is deplorable? It may not be all that we desire, but it is at all events vastly better than it was 14 years ago, and the improvement is due to the loyalty, devotion, and, indeed, enthusiasm with which local education authorities have administered Part II of the Education Act.' In closing the letter, he also pointed out that Lord Haldane had not dealt with the important question of finance in either of his speeches.

In March, *The Teachers' World* asked James to write an article for their paper, and he wrote on 'Continued Education.' In this paper he expressed the hope that Mr. Fisher was about to ask Parliament to make *effective* the minimum leaving age of 14 at the schools by abolishing half time and other exceptions and exemptions, and assured him in this of universal support. 'It would be better still,' he says, 'if Mr. Fisher could see his way to introduce at the same time a compulsory scheme of continued education within business hours for young persons between the ages of 14 and 18.' 'My present object,' he adds later, 'is to urge the opportuneness of the present time for setting up a scheme, the details of which will require much thought and care on the part of those bodies who will be entrusted with the responsibility of carrying the scheme into effect, in order that it may be brought into operation immediately after the war.' After sketching the *gradual way* in which such a scheme, if passed, would slowly come into force, he ends the paper with these words: 'The Nation is now, I believe, prepared as it has never been before, for continued education to be established on broad lines, and for attendance to be enforced. It would be unfortunate if the occasion were allowed to pass. Of all the educational reforms which are in the air, this is the most pressing, for it affects the whole population at its most critical time of life, and the war has made this change particularly opportune in many ways, not the least important consideration being that at its close hundreds of thousands of men and women will be seeking employment, and will to some extent take the place of boys and girls whom employers have been obliged to take in default of more skilled persons. The training, physical, liberal and vocational, of the adolescent is the *most* urgent need of the

country in the great reconstruction which we all hope for.'

Some six weeks later, presiding over the Education Committee in Liverpool, James referred to the educational proposals of Mr. Fisher, whose speech in the House of Commons, he said, reached the highest ideals of educationists, and he thought the Committee would concur in nearly every detail of the programme unfolded. Mr. Fisher expressed himself wholeheartedly with the policy of this Committee, which was to raise the school leaving age to 14, and also with the Committee's desire that there should be compulsory continued education from 14 to 18 years of age.

In May, James was one of a deputation to Mr. Fisher from the Association of Municipal Corporations on certain points about salaries and war bonus which had not been made clear in his speech. In June, Mr. Fisher appointed a Departmental Committee to enquire into the principles which should determine the construction of scales of salary for teachers in elementary schools, and James was made a member of this committee; and about a fortnight later, they held their first meeting, which took place during the great daylight air raid over London which did so much damage, though in the depths of the Education Office they heard nothing of it. In the months that followed, James was constantly in London attending meetings of the Association of Municipal Corporations and the Education Sub-Committee of the same, of which he was Chairman, and the Departmental Committee on Salaries, all of which he generally attended on the same visit.

In May, during the King's visit to Liverpool, James was presented to the King by the Lord Mayor, at the Town Hall, among the chief war workers of the city.

In June we had a garden party at Ulverscroft for all the workers at the Patriotic Workroom in Birkenhead, which I had started and helped to carry on, and James came home for it, and was the life and soul of the party; and the little children who came with their mothers gathered round him and went with him to hunt for strawberries under the green leaves.

On James's visits to London, he almost always spent an evening with Mr. Cameron, and wrote enthusiastically of the splendid work he was doing, but always added: 'he is so anxious to get back to Liverpool if only this war would end, but no one seems to expect an early termination of the war, though all are confident of the ultimate result.'

In August, 1917, we went to Pen y Gwryd, the old inn just below the Llanberis Pass, and occupied some new rooms added at the back, with a fascinating sitting-room with a door opening out on to the hillside, where the white lambs nibbled the grass and called to each other incessantly. We were very content; even the battling with howling winds and driving rain brought its own refreshment, and the turbulent mountain torrents seemed to drown for a time the awful sense of war and the rush and gloom of that time. The roads were quiet; few motors or carriages of any kind passed; joy rides were forbidden, and no chars-a-bancs ever disturbed the fastnesses of those hills. It was surprising, however, how many visitors turned in for meals, and how many friends James found among them. Almost everyone spoke to him of his Tribunal work, and I gathered more and more how deeply it had impressed people. In a letter from Mr. Cameron at this time he said: 'I do hope this holiday has done Mr. Alsop good after the strenuous and anxious year he has been through. The Tribunal work was very trying,

but it must be some consolation to know how much Mr. Alsop's work as Chairman is appreciated in the city, and in the country at large. One of his fellow-workers was telling me about it, and said that Mr. Alsop had set a model and standard for the whole country.'

On returning home, James went up to London to see Mr. Cameron, having heard how unwell he was, and he was greatly shocked to find him so altered. He persuaded him to see a specialist at once, but alas, it was to hear the gravest news, and on seeking a second opinion to have this news confirmed, he was obliged to leave his work in London at once, and went to Edinburgh to be near his home while going through two severe operations. This was all a very great trouble to James; he felt it keenly, and though Mr. Cameron was so young, there was an intimate and beautiful friendship between them, and the fine brave way in which Mr. Cameron faced this awful shadow on all his bright hopes touched James deeply, and in this time of anxiety they were drawn even more closely together than before. In the months of convalescence that followed the operations, when his strength began to return, his letters came constantly, and as James wrote to him telling him of the many interesting developments in education, Mr. Cameron became more and more eager to return to Liverpool, and take up his old work again, and gradually began to look forward to the possibility of doing so.

In October, Mr. Fisher, Minister of Education, visited Liverpool, delivering an address before the 'Council of Education' on the proposals he was bringing forward in his new Education Bill, and he also delivered the prizes, and gave an inspiring address at the Collegiate School, dining with James beforehand to meet the members of the School Committee,

the Headmaster and one or two leaders of education in the city. It was a very memorable visit, and everyone interested in education was encouraged and cheered. At the Council of Education, Mr. Fisher brought forward his famous proposition for Continuation Schools, and roused the greatest hope that something would indeed now be done to lengthen the period of compulsory education in the elementary schools, and to make it compulsory for those who had left school to attend classes until 18 years of age. At the Collegiate School, he made a wonderful appeal to the boys to attain an educated state for the delight and usefulness that it could give, and in every way he set municipal Secondary Education on the highest level.

In the middle of October, 1917, James was obliged, through increased pressure of business, to send in his resignation from Mr. Fisher's Salaries Committee. Mr. Fisher himself wrote to James expressing much regret and thanking him warmly for the assistance he had rendered in its deliberations, and Mr. Stephen also wrote to him regretting that, in framing their report, they would not have the benefit of his experience.

On October 13th, the Liverpool Education Committee very carefully considered the new Education Bill then before Parliament, and a recommendation was brought forward by James, as Chairman, and passed by the Committee, welcoming the proposals in the Bill for raising to 14 years the compulsory age of attendance in elementary schools, and for advancing instruction in such schools, and also for the establishment of a system of compulsory continued education during the period of adolescence; and desiring an opportunity of further considering these in detail. At the same time the recommendation declared the Committee's

opposition to certain clauses in the Bill which took away or limited important powers which local education authorities had hitherto exercised, and urged that the Bill should be so amended as to leave all such powers unimpaired.

In November, James brought up this subject in the City Council, and was warmly supported by the Council in this earnest appeal to the Board of Education that local powers should not be curtailed, and that they should confer similar powers in relation to the new developments in education which the new Bill sought to bring about.

On November 13th, James was again unanimously re-elected Chairman of the Liverpool Education Committee.

At a meeting of the University Court in December, 1917, James as Pro-Chancellor referred to the growing intensity of the conditions under which the work of the University continued to be carried on, and mentioned that the number of full-time students had sunk to 565, and that no male student was now left eligible for service with His Majesty's Forces; and later in his speech he announced that the sum of £10,000 had been left to the University to found a Chair of Commerce, and spoke of the time as particularly opportune for such a Chair to be established in Liverpool, not only because of the problems, many of them abstruse and difficult, connected with commerce, and other mercantile matters, but of the special problems created by the war. There would, no doubt, be special problems following peace, and owing to the enormous volume of commerce and the interdependence of foreign nations one with another, they would be of a very complicated character, and he thought that it was peculiarly opportune at that time that they should have the possibility of appointing someone whose

business it would be to study at their roots, and with all the resources of knowledge, these problems as they presented themselves. Referring to Liverpool as the centre of the Chemical Industry, he spoke of the impossibility of undertaking more research work in Chemistry until they got the new buildings; the present ones were out-grown.

In December, James distributed the prizes at the Liverpool Institute, his old school. Various people wrote to him afterwards about his speech that night, and all seemed delighted. Mr. Whitehouse, the Headmaster, wrote enthusiastically, delighted with James's appreciation of the forward movement of the school at that time, and the inspiration he had given to the boys to feel a pride in their school, which had always been a pioneer in making improvements. James predicted wonderful changes in England during the next ten years. Those changes would be, he thought, of a profound character, although it was impossible to gauge their measure or define their extent. There would certainly be an economic change owing to the enormous loss of wealth at present sustained by the country, and this would be accentuated by increased taxation. This might lead to the necessity of strict personal and national economy and to greater simplicity of life. They had further, he said, to face great changes between Capital and Labour, and in the relations between the State and the individual. They would be obliged to do something for the State as a whole in a much greater degree than they had been accustomed to. All these things would offer unique opportunities for the boys of the present generation who would take part in them, and he advised his youthful hearers at the school to profit by the facilities for education given to them.

Mr. Whitehouse in his letter to James afterwards,

commented on the forward look throughout his speech and the interest of it, not going back to dwell on the old and great days when he had, as a boy, taken so keen an interest in his school, but leading the thoughts of the boys towards better things ahead.

The Headmaster's letter touched something very vital in James's character. No one ever felt more for, or had done more for, or received more from, his old school than James had done, but these experiences of the past lay treasured but silent in his memory, and beyond and in front he was still pressing forward, never speaking of all it had been, always thinking of what it might become.

Mr. Cameron, too, wrote about this speech from his sick bed in Edinburgh, and said Lady Dale had written to tell him about it, and had mentioned how much everyone had enjoyed it, and that she had said (though he hoped James would not tell her so), that he had in some parts of his speech suggested all sorts of pleasantly naughty deeds to infant minds, and that, unlike many speeches, the young as well as the grown-ups were enthusiastic about it. 'I only wish,' added Mr. Cameron, 'that I had been there.'

During the latter part of the year 1917, teachers' salaries and the question of the new scale, not only took much of James's time and thought, but also called for the utmost patience. At this time, too, the various clauses of the Education Bill were being hotly discussed by the Education Committee. James was still working on the Military Tribunal, but the work was not quite on so huge a scale as it had been, and through great stress of other work, his place in the Chair was often taken by the generous and capable deputy Chairman, Mr. Harrison Jones.

Before the year 1917 ended, James received an intimation from the Home Secretary that in view of the service he had rendered on work connected with

the war, it was proposed to submit his name to the King for appointment as an officer of the Order of the British Empire, and his name appeared later in the King's New Year Honours. Warm congratulations came to him, and I think everyone was very heartily glad that he should have this recognition of his arduous and fine work for the country, but he himself never took it as a personal honour, but rather as a tribute to the good work done by the whole Tribunal, who had worked so vigorously and loyally together.

All this time letters were often coming from friends working in various Government departments in London, and Professor Gonner kept us lively with descriptions of his various experiences at the Ministry of Food. Letters were also coming from relatives and friends at the front, both in France and Palestine, and from prisoners of war in Germany, and interest, hope, anxiety, sorrow, were alive everywhere.

At the end of January, 1918, the Liverpool Education Committee passed a resolution recording satisfaction with the new Education Bill, and James as Chairman, in speaking of the Bill said: 'The new Bill meets to a very large extent the objections which our Committee and other local Education Authorities felt it necessary to urge against the 1917 Bill. The Bill in its present form is a very great improvement. For example, the clauses which were objected to from many points of view, by which the Board of Education were to be the sole judges of whether particular things were authorised by the Act or not, have been withdrawn altogether. The clauses which proposed to establish provincial Councils, a very doubtful sort of measure, and very difficult to understand, have also been withdrawn. Then there was a third clause which has been withdrawn, which gave the Board of Education power to put an end to the educational powers of the smaller local education authorities.

The clause with regard to grants which was left vague in the first Bill, has been made definite to the extent that it is proposed that the Board of Education should pay at least 50 per cent. of the expenditure of the local Education Authority. That is a great advantage. Another clause upon which they bestowed a good deal of criticism, which gave power to the Board of Education practically to force their own schemes upon local Education Authorities, has been considerably modified. The alterations of the Bill are nearly all improvements.' He welcomed them because they would make the Bill 'more workable than it would otherwise have been.' He moved: 'That the Committee desire to express to the President of the Board of Education their appreciation of the consideration given to the representations submitted to him by the Liverpool Education Authority with respect to the administrative clauses of the Education Bill, 1917, and further, the Committee, whilst reserving the right to suggest amendments in detail, desire to inform the President of their cordial support of the Education Bill, 1918, and their earnest hope that in the national interest the Bill may be placed on the Statute Book at the earliest possible moment.'

James had had much anxiety over these alterations, but it was a great satisfaction that the clauses he so strongly objected to were in the end satisfactorily altered or omitted altogether from the Bill.

On February 13th, 1918, James went to London to receive his decoration from the King, and afterwards spent two hours at the Education Office.

All this year, 1918, things at the front were extremely anxious, though it became gradually more certain that the 'Allies' were holding their own, but terrible things were happening, and the submarine warfare was at its height. On April 25th there was a

very largely attended intercessory service held in the Liverpool Exchange News Room, and I remember James, with many other friends, going to it ; and a little later, on August 4th, Remembrance Day, we went over to a very wonderful open-air service held on Sunday in front of St. George's Hall, when ministers of many denominations took part, and the beloved Bishop Chavasse spoke to that great multitude. The feeling everywhere was intense. The strain of war seemed to have become almost unbearable, and yet no one gave in, but struggled to find every means possible of heartening each other as hope came slowly nearer.

At the end of April Sir Alfred Dale fell ill, and had to undergo an operation, and this was a grave anxiety to James ; their friendship had deepened through these exacting, anxious years, and their work for the University had drawn them closely together.

In May, James sent in his resignation of the Chairmanship of the Military Tribunal. The pressure of office and other work had become so great that he could no longer attend the meetings and do the work needed.

At this time the American troops were pouring over to England to give their help at last to the exhausted countries of Europe. Many things were done to welcome these troops at the port of Liverpool, but too often, alas, the men were in those days received into hospital on their arrival, as a scourge of influenza and pneumonia fell upon the crowded ships that brought them over ; but those of them who marched through our streets, and they were many, were received with glad welcome, and when it was possible to entertain them in public or give them welcome in private homes, it was gladly offered, and everyone rejoiced to see them come. I remember James often speaking to me with the deepest sympathy for

them : passing, passing, passing down the streets with their jaunty air but sad faces, in a strange country, and on the way to a terrible war. We, too, with many others offered hospitality to them in our home, and took part in an evening reception in Liverpool to the officers of the American Army and Navy, and in July there was a great review of American troops, and a Town Hall luncheon to the officers.

By this time, Sir Alfred Dale was better, and back again at the University, but it was known that he was likely to send in his resignation before the end of the year, though it would not take effect until some months later ; but it was such a grave prospect that those who had the University concerns at heart were already looking round for someone who, when the sad time came, could fill his place. All these discussions and anxieties fell heavily on James as President of the Council and Pro-Chancellor, and not only occupied time, but a great deal of thought, and the idea of losing Sir Alfred was depressing to him.

On September 12th, we were back from our holiday in Wales, and the autumn began in earnest, and was to be a memorable one ; it was to bring victory ; it was to bring change. Every week as it passed, the intensity and anxiety of the prolonged struggle grew, but there grew also a steadying hope and a strengthening belief that the Allies had indeed got a grip of the enemy at last, and that these invaders and wreckers of all civilised life and peace were falling back gradually and steadily now. And with this growing assurance there arose a general feeling of preparation for great developments in the future, and a hope of some great increased good, and some nobler life for all.

On September 24th, at the Education Committee, James spoke of the new Education Act as marking a

new era in the development of education in the city and elsewhere, and said it was their duty as well as their desire to make the most of the Act, and to do all that seemed desirable in the interests of the children for whom they were responsible. The Director, he said, had prepared a report on the Act which would be of assistance to members of the Committee. Everything would be done to bring the blessings of the Act into operation, so that it would bear fruit at the earliest possible opportunity, and he hoped each section of the Committee would study the portion of the Act relating to its own sphere of influence, and would take in hand as soon as possible such reforms and changes as seemed desirable.

About this time, also, the Lord Kitchener Memorial Scholarships were founded, and a special Liverpool fund and branch was formed, and James took an active part in the preparation for, and the working out of this trust, by which men who had left their education to fight for their country, could be assisted afterwards to take up their higher education in the Universities once more.

In October, it was arranged at the Education Committee that the Oakes Institute, a high-class boys' school at the north end of Liverpool, should be taken over by the city at the beginning of the new year, and that it should then be carried on as a Secondary School under the control of the Education Committee; but in temporary buildings, until they could carry out their promise to the Board of Education that, as soon as they were able, they would build a suitable Secondary School at this north end of the city, which would accommodate 400 to 600 boys. Some months later, when the school was taken over, James's name was given to it in remembrance of his work for Secondary Education in the city, and in 1923, two years after James's death,

when I was asked to lay the foundation stone of the new school building, it was named 'The Alsop High School for Boys.'

The days of October and November, 1918, were filled with every kind of interest, and James was strenuously at work. The cloud of anxiety which had hung so long over the country seemed lifting as victorious news came through, and at last, on November 11th, the armistice with Germany was signed.

At 11 a.m., when we stood outside in the Ulverscroft garden, waiting eagerly for the sound of signals bringing the glad news that the armistice was indeed signed, a silver aeroplane appeared overhead, sailing low over Ulverscroft, bearing on its shining side the word 'Peace.' Again and again it crossed and re-crossed our home, shaking out balls of red and blue and white into the air, and we knew at last that those who had fought and worked so bravely had not fought and died in vain.

Soon after the armistice was signed, among the many services and rejoicings that took place, the University of Liverpool held a great Thanksgiving Service in St. Luke's church, Bishop Chavasse giving a beautiful address, and Sir Alfred Dale reading the lesson, and in the evening the students gave vent to their thankfulness and joy in a lively sing-song at the University, to both of which James went, glad and thankful with all his heart. On the proposal of the Senate, addresses of congratulation were sent from the University to the King, Foch, Beatty, Haig, the King of the Belgians, the King of Italy, the Chancellor, Lord Derby, and also, I believe, to President Wilson.

For nine years, James had held the position of President of the Council and Pro-Chancellor of the University of Liverpool, as no changes were thought desirable during war, but in November, when the

war was over, he retired from this position, and when the meeting of the University Court took place, he was made Senior Pro-Chancellor.

A few days later, when the University Council met, the Vice-Chancellor, Sir Alfred Dale, paid a high tribute to James's work on his retirement from the Presidency, speaking with warmth of the special services he had rendered as President over so long a period, and of the years before, when he had been Vice-President of the Council from the foundation of the University, and also of an earlier period still, when through so many years he had been an active member of the College Council, almost from its start.

Mr. Rathbone, the new President, also joined in a most warm tribute to James's work for the University.

At a meeting of the University Court at the close of November, James as Pro-Chancellor moved the adoption of the Report of the University for the year, and said it was with inexpressible feelings of gratitude and relief that after four anxious years, they could look forward with confidence to a victorious and a just peace. They were proud to think that the University had played its part in the great conflict of ideals, and that staff, students, and former students, all had their share in the glory of victory, as during these tremendous years they had had their full share of labour and of sacrifice. The University Roll of Service now contained 1,640 names, and the list of naval and military honours was remarkable, both for the number and the character of the distinctions won. It included no fewer than five Victoria Crosses, and one bar to the Victoria Cross. There were also 21 awards of the Distinguished Service Order, while the number of Military Crosses was no less than 70. But it was not only by service in the field that the University had contributed to the successful prosecution of the war. Their Professors occupied or

had occupied important posts in the Foreign Office, the Admiralty, the War Office, the Ministry of Munitions, and the Food Control Office, and members of the teaching staff had rendered signal service on numerous Departmental and other Committees in connection with the war. They had had much to do with high explosives, with anti-submarine contrivances, with dyes and with drugs. In distant regions, they had acted as intelligence officers, and they had taken a notable part in the French Red Cross and the Serbian Red Cross. They had done splendid work in War Hospitals. Their women had given invaluable help in the Hospital, the Convalescent Home, and in many branches of national service. But at what a cost had all this service been rendered. No less than 176 of those whose names appeared on the University Roll of Service had given their lives. There were also 32 reported missing and prisoners of war, and 121 wounded. Even those who had passed through the ordeal unharmed had lost precious years of early manhood which could hardly be recovered; careers had been interrupted, opportunities lost, and ambitions checked or diverted. And he went on to say that an important part of the work of the University during the next few years would be to assist and encourage its old students to renew and complete their studies, and also to welcome men who but for the war would naturally have proceeded to the University. It was satisfactory to know that already old students discharged from the army had rejoined their classes, and that other discharged men were seeking admission. It was not so well known as it should be, that a considerable portion of the large sum raised by public subscription to perpetuate the memory of the late Lord Kitchener was devoted to Scholarships for discharged soldiers and sailors, which were tenable at any University in the United

Kingdom, and that a local fund with the same object had lately been started under the auspices of the Lord Mayor for the special benefit of Liverpool men.

James went on to say that the numbers of students in the University was already steadily increasing, and that there were in the present session 100 more full-time students than in the last session, and further that one of the most remarkable features of the war period had been that it had coincided with a striking increase in the number of boys and girls attending the Secondary Schools. The numbers in the seven schools controlled by the Liverpool Education Committee had increased between 1914 and 1918 by no less than 50 per cent. If one looked for the cause, one found it firstly in the high wages and large profits incident to a period of war inflation, and partly, he felt sure, in a new realisation of the value of higher education. If when the first cause became less effective, pecuniary need was all that stood in the way of the boys' and girls' full and free development, he was sure it would not pass the wit of local or imperial patriotism to find a remedy. The Tutorial Classes of the University, and the efforts of the 'Workers' Educational Association,' had also influenced the increase in the number of students, and he went on to say that he felt sure they must anticipate in the near future a rapid and steady accession of students to a point far beyond the number for whom it had hitherto been necessary to make provision; and he need not say that this would necessitate a corresponding increase in their teaching staff, and also in buildings and equipment, which already in some departments were overcrowded. But there were other and independent reasons for a large development in the resources of the University. One of the many lessons of the Great War was that industry needed all the help that science could give her. That help could

best be given through the Universities by training experts and conducting research. This could only be done effectually if there was co-operation between the manufacturer on the one hand and the University on the other. But they could only undertake the kind of research work which was required, by building large additional Chemical Laboratories. An excellent site had been secured, and funds were now required to erect and equip a suitable building. He had dwelt, he said, on the needs of Chemistry, because they appeared to be most urgent; but for similar reasons it was also necessary to provide new equipment and apparatus in many other departments. They also urgently needed an endowment and a building for their veterinary department, which under post-war conditions would acquire a new importance. Other speakers followed, and at the close of the meeting, when the new officers were elected, Sir Edward Russell, in proposing James as Senior Pro-Chancellor, said: 'There is no one upon whom the dignity could be better bestowed than on Mr. Alsop, who has gained the utmost confidence of his fellow citizens and all connected with the University.'

Early in December, Sir Alfred Dale tendered his resignation to the Council of the University, to take effect at the close of the Session, in September of the following year. His resignation was received with the most profound regret, and the warmest tributes were paid by members of the Council not only to his great and invaluable services to the University, and before that to the College, but also to the support he had always so generously given to the many movements tending to the social improvement of the community.

To James his resignation was a great blow; no two strong men had ever worked together more harmoniously than they had done, or with a more

ardent faith in, and devotion to, the object of their work. They had taken a great part together in the building up, not only of the Liverpool University, but of the Modern University, and they had given of their finest strength to this great cause. When James retired from the Presidency, and Sir Alfred sent in his resignation as Vice-Chancellor, a great chapter in the history of the University was closed. The war was over; the rush and swell of the new tide of change was breaking over the world and round about our city and our University, and with the tide came new faces and new life.

James was now Senior Pro-Chancellor, and had a great and honoured position, but he was no longer at the helm. His close friend and fellow-worker, Mr. Hugh Rathbone, was President of the Council, and James no longer had the responsibility of that dual daily leadership with the Vice-Chancellor which he had held for so many years, and through the stress and strain of war. He was, however, more keenly alive than ever to the advancing interests of the University, to the great developments he saw coming in many directions, and to the interests of the men who had been in the army and on war work, and who were now coming back to finish their interrupted courses or to begin a course of study not able to be begun before the war. The numbers were increasing by leaps and bounds, and difficulties of all kinds were increasing with them. Difficulties of space, equipment, teaching staff, and above all the great need of funds to meet this new inrush and carry things forward. It was a time of exhilaration, but of grave anxiety also for those who had the University at heart, and who saw the great opportunities for new work opening out in many directions and the growing need for extension, but who recognised also the rising cost of living, and with it of salaries,

and the difficulty of keeping things even up to the old standard, and who saw with dismay that the present funds of the University could in no way be made to meet these increasing demands.

The last weeks of 1918 were for James very strenuous ones; many problems were before him for consideration, and the necessity of looking round for a new Vice-Chancellor to take Sir Alfred Dale's place in the coming year was beginning seriously to engage the thoughts of all those governing the University.

There was a great deputation to Mr. Fisher on the subject of more financial help from the Government for the University. On every hand there was a demand for things to be put straight and made better. As Chairman of the Education Committee, many urgent appeals came to James at this time, to do all in his power to get school teachers demobilised as quickly as possible, so that the difficulties might be lessened of the overworked teaching staffs in the schools.

On December 3rd Mr. Fisher wrote to James in answer to a letter on this subject, saying: 'I need hardly say that I realise how much the schools throughout the country have suffered owing to the war, and am most anxious that they should be restored to normal conditions. I am in communication with the Demobilisation Authorities with regard to the early release of teachers from military service.'

At the close of this momentous and busy year, James once again had his beloved Secondary Education under his special care, as the Chairman was unwell and obliged to go away for some months, and it was during the early part of January, 1919, that 'Hartfield' was finally taken over to be made into one of the new Secondary Schools, and it was also

in the same month that the Alsop High School first started on its way under its new Headmaster.

The new Chemical Laboratories at the University were also at last arranged for, and Mr. Arnold Thornely chosen as architect.

In February a good site for the proposed new building for the Alsop High School was found and decided on, and Archdeacon Spooner, who at first was somewhat dismayed at the thought of a big school coming into such close proximity to his quiet dwelling, was afterwards most generously willing to give up a portion of his beloved garden for the increase of the school playing fields. I remember the long talks that he and James had over this subject, and how his kindness, generosity and interest delighted James.

In February, James presided at the Liverpool Training School of Cookery, when for the first time since the College was established some 45 years before, the diplomas gained by the students were distributed in public in the Hall of the Royal Institution. James made it an occasion for speaking of Miss Fanny Calder's great pioneer work for Domestic Science. Miss Fanny Calder had, he said, started this work over 40 years ago, and he did not at all think the country as a whole realised what it owed to Miss Calder for the splendid system of Domestic Science training in the country, that had been copied in all civilised countries in the world. Just as Florence Nightingale was called 'The Lady of the Lamp,' he thought they might call Miss Fanny Calder 'The Lady of the Fireside,' and this happy title has, I believe, with many who loved Miss Calder, clung to her since.

Miss Fanny Calder's enthusiasm and courage always appealed to James greatly, and in the many difficulties she encountered in her public life, she

sought his help constantly, and I think seldom in vain. They were devoted friends.

In March, James piloted the Education Estimates through the Council, explaining with wonderful lucidity the complicated mass of figures involved, the new increase in the Board's Education Grant on the one hand, and the enormous increase in Teachers' salaries and other salaries on the other. In speaking of the future, he said: 'My idea is to increase the contribution of the Exchequer to 60 per cent., and then the burden upon Liverpool would not be unreasonable, but if the whole of the money was found by the Exchequer, they would retain the whole of the control, and they have, I feel, too much control already.'

At the Education Committee in April, James brought up the subject of the Training of Ex-Service men, who were not of University rank, and who were desirous of special training to fit them for employment. The Board of Education had asked the Committee to undertake this work, and James strongly urged that it was the duty of the Education Committee to comply with the wishes of the Board in this respect, and it was unanimously decided to form a special committee to deal with this work, and that urgent cases should be dealt with as quickly as possible.

It was a crowded springtime, and at Ulverscroft we had people coming and going constantly. The new Vice-Chancellor had not yet been found, though Mr. Rathbone, the President, was most actively engaged over it. James was constantly attending hurried committees and consultations on this all-important choice.

In June, before we left for a few days' holiday in Leamington, James piloted the University Grant through the City Council, and the Vice-Chancellorship

of the University had by that time been offered to, and accepted by, Dr. Adami.

The weather when we reached Leamington turned very hot, and James was tired and exhausted. In the day he did very little, but in the evenings we sat out in the gardens until late, listening to the band, the music and the cool air greatly refreshing him. One day we spent in Birmingham, a day we had long looked forward to, when James took me to see the house where he was born, and the church which had been built for his father, and the cemetery where his father and brothers and sister were buried; afterwards we visited a favourite cousin of James's, living outside Birmingham in one of the sweetest, most peaceful of homes, and this was their last meeting, as not many months afterwards Alfred Willcox died.

On June 28th we had a large garden party at Ulverscroft to meet Sir Alfred and Lady Dale before they left Liverpool. The weather was stormy and uncertain, and many things we had planned for the garden had to be given up, but as parties have a way of doing when the right friends meet, the wind and the weather were forgotten in the natural pleasure of friendship and the meeting of friends.

A few days later came the Degree Day at the University, and in the evening the University Association Dinner to Sir Alfred and Lady Dale, and on the following day a most delightful garden party given for them by Mrs. and Miss Holt. This, I think, was Mrs. Holt's last garden party, too, and in looking back over those next few years one cannot help noticing how one after the other in such quick succession, so many of the old great lovers of and workers for the University passed quietly on their way, and other enthusiasts and workers rose up to take their work.

Up to this time James had been Chairman of the

Education Sub-Committee of the Association of Municipal Corporations, which met in London, but in July, 1919, before we went away to Scotland, he retired from this Chairmanship, though he still attended the meetings when he could do so.

At Aviemore for more than a month James took a quiet and much-needed rest, and returned wonderfully better for the change and eager and ready to be at work again.

Of the many things that crowded into that autumn, the meeting of the University Court was one of its landmarks. James, as Pro-Chancellor, presided, and having spoken with much feeling of the great loss they all felt at the absence of Sir Alfred Dale, the first Vice-Chancellor of the University, who had through his courage, ability, tact and enthusiasm done so much to give the University its proud position amongst the Universities of the country, he went on to welcome very heartily the new Vice-Chancellor, Dr. Adami, who made a fine and impressive speech on taking up his work at the University, describing graphically the great present needs of the University, and ending with a very urgent appeal for largely increased funds to meet the ripeness of the time for a great increase and extension of work.

Dr. Adami was received enthusiastically, and Sir James Hope Simpson joined in a very urgent appeal for increased funds, as indeed did every other speaker. Much interest was aroused, but it was not until the New Year, 1920, that the great appeal to the city and its surrounding townships was actually made.

All the autumn, 1919, a multitude of interests occupied James, and the Burnham Committee and various other committees all discussing teachers' salaries, took up a large amount of his time, and it was during this autumn, I think, that he gave evidence before the Classical Committee then sitting in London.

Many letters came to James about this time from Sir Alfred Dale, describing his new life at Newbury, and the alterations they were carrying out in their new house, and describing the pine wood in the garden where he was busy marking trees to be cut down by himself later, and describing the undergrowth in the wood through which he was making paths and clearing open spaces, and stacking as he went faggots for the winter fires. The country life filled them with delight, and he and Lady Dale wrote hoping that when the summer came we should go and stay with them, and laying plans for taking James some day to Hungerford, not far from Newbury, where James had lived when a little boy of six. Sometimes James and Sir Alfred met in London, as Sir Alfred took up important Examination work there from time to time, but they were both so busy that these meetings were very short ones.

CHAPTER VI

1919-1920

IN December Mr. Cameron was taken very suddenly ill again, and was taken to his home in Edinburgh where he died on January 14th. James saw him at the station before he left, and in the sad weeks that followed there were not many days when some little message did not come from him.

When the Education Committee met again after Mr. Cameron's death, James spoke of Mr. Cameron with intense feeling and affection, and in describing the qualities and character and outlook of his beloved young friend, one can not help seeing how James found in him the expression of ideals which were set before his own mind all through life. Indeed, the sympathy which bound these two together was one of natural affinity in outlook and character. I used to like to see them together in the ease of our Ulverscroft home, and to feel as they talked the sympathy between them, the loving reverence on Mr. Cameron's part and the love and trust on James's, and sometimes as we sat on winter evenings in the glow of the firelight, we would persuade him to play to us and he would draw his little flute from his pocket and pipe away to us his beloved Scotch ditties.

In January Dr. Montessori visited Liverpool and gave a lecture through an interpreter in the Central Hall. The Lord Mayor entertained her at luncheon, and James gave a small reception for her afterwards at the University Club, but as she only spoke in Italian it was difficult for most of us to talk to her. James was a good deal interested in her system of

education for young children, and in one or two of the Elementary Schools in Liverpool it was at that time being carried out with much success in the Junior classes.

During 1920 the variety of work and interests which filled James's time was as extensive as ever, and when he took up any work it was always to take an important part in it. His private talks and public meetings over teachers' salaries alone were hard work, and took a big slice out of his time, and many of these interviews and meetings took place in London as well as Liverpool. His general work for the Education Committee was constant and exacting, and though he had splendid help from his Committee and the Director and many others besides, still the ultimate responsibility and guidance was his, and his advice and judgment were sought at every turn. Then there was his own business; and although he no longer took a constant or an active part in it, the part he did take was always to the last a responsible one. Giving advice and counsel as to policy in big actions and in difficult decisions, he was at the office a part of every day to give help if he could, and to the end kept a certain number of old clients, both private and public, who were devoted to him, and whose affairs he saw after and advised about himself. Social interests, too, he never gave up: he loved to meet people and was always ready to accept invitations. But his greatest interest was the University, it was always in his heart and in his mind. When he was a boy, it was an ideal, and as it stood to-day it was the embodiment of his most eager hopes, his most strenuous endeavours. He had battled in the past for its very life side by side with many great workers, and he watched still over its growth and honour with the deepest love and faith.

He was thinking constantly of all kinds of personal

ways in which its interests could be helped forward, and of people whose interests could be awakened and drawn in, and to his Exchange Club dinners he gave more and more careful consideration, trying always to widen interests and to bring together those who would like to meet. He was full of initiative, full of interest in other people's lives, and was always in the most natural way looking out for ways in which help and pleasure could be given. I don't know if other people noticed what I noticed, and I was often sitting by when he was talking to people, but he had so many kind things to say about others, and so often said a good word for them behind their backs. There was always something in him eager to give chances to people, chances of pleasure, chances of education, chances of going to beautiful places and of hearing and seeing beautiful things. As I look back, I see people, too, who had not had many chances in life, and who were quiet and rather out of things, whose lives were brightened by his interest in them and his quiet way of talking to them as if they knew, perhaps, far more than they really did. He was a great encourager, a great brightener of many lives, and he believed in people.

In March, 1920, after many preparations and discussions, the great University appeal was made for £1,000,000, which had been foreshadowed in Vice-Chancellor Adami's speech at the meeting of the University Court in November. It was now publicly made and endorsed by a great meeting of influential citizens in the Town Hall of Liverpool, the Lord Mayor in the Chair.

Lord Derby, the Chancellor, who was unable to be present, wrote an ardent appeal to all interested in the prosperity of Liverpool and the districts served by the University to respond to the fullest according to their means, and this was read to the meeting.

The meeting took place during the visit of the Government's University Grants Committee to Liverpool, the members of which were at that time inspecting the University, and various members of the Committee attended at the Town Hall, and Sir Wm. McCormick and Sir Wilmot Herringham joined their voices in the appeal. It was a magnificent meeting, and the speaking persuasive and vigorous, and during the meeting it was stated that the amount already promised amounted to £201,500.

In March the Senate and Council of the University invited James to accept the Honorary Degree of Doctor of Laws [LL.D.].

The Honorary Degrees were to be conferred at a special Graduation Ceremony, to be held at St. George's Hall, Liverpool, on May 28th, at noon.

This honour was prized by him very greatly, and it came in the last year of his life. Sir Alfred Dale, too, was to receive the same great honour, and he wrote to James: 'It was a great pleasure to see your name in the list of Honorary Degrees, and I am glad that after working together for so many years we are also able to be admitted together.'

James's old friend and fellow-worker, Sir Michael Sadler, was also receiving the same degree, and he, too, wrote: 'It added very much to the pleasure of being proposed for this great honour of the University of Liverpool to learn that you would also be among the honorary graduands. The work which you invited me to do for the City Education Committee and in which you gave me throughout such invaluable help and support, taught me how much higher and secondary education in the city, and in the great district of which it is the centre, owed to your wise counsel and patient statesmanship. I never think of Liverpool without remembering your kindness and the many and very interesting talks at your house.'

Many warm congratulations came to James from very varied sources, and amongst them some of the warmest from the teachers of Liverpool.

But before the Graduation Ceremony took place came a very anxious and busy time. The Education Estimates had increased enormously, in spite of every effort to keep down waste of all kinds. Teachers' salaries conforming to the new scale with war bonus to meet the increased cost of living, were one of the chief factors, and besides these was the higher price of all materials used in connection with the schools.

In March James brought these estimates before the Education Committee, and in April before the City Council, and at both meetings, after prolonged discussions, the estimates were finally accepted and passed.

In these months James was often in London over his Insurance Company's meetings and his Education Committees, Burnham and others, and he was, too, having an anxious time about his sight, and went through a worrying time over difficult alterations which had to be made to his glasses, and it was many weeks before they could be made to suit him and only after many journeys to London about them.

James was occupied too, and very much interested at this time, in working out with the Director, Mr. Legge, a scheme which would outline the use to be made of the new provisions of the Education Act, which, if it were passed and approved by the city and afterwards accepted by the Board of Education, would become binding on the Education Authority.

At the meeting of the Education Committee on May 17th, James brought the first part of the scheme before the Committee, and said in the course of doing so, that the introduction of this scheme, which had been prepared by the Director of Education, would be a

document of permanent value from the historical point of view, and would in future years be a highly prized work of reference on the efforts and aims of education in Liverpool; 'and,' he added, 'the scheme as now brought forward is not complete, it is only the first part. Three important matters to which in due time we shall be bound to give attention are not included in this review. One is the question of compulsory attendance at Continuation Schools, but in that regard the Act has not yet come into operation; but when it does it will have a very important effect on the question of the employment of young persons.'

He explained that the Education Committee did not propose to frame any definite policy under that heading just then, as the date of its coming into operation was uncertain, but when it did come, they would have to give attention to such important questions as the provision of buildings, the provision of teaching staff, and the devising of a suitable curriculum.

The *training of teachers* and the supply of *adult education* were the other two subjects with which the scheme did not deal at present. They were omitted, not because of any doubt as to their importance, but simply because they were matters which could wait for a little time. The co-operation of other authorities would be required in any scheme of training, and the question of adult education was as yet only at the beginning. When the Education Committee and the City Council had given their provisional approval, the scheme would be advertised and made available to the public, so that parents and societies who wished to have it modified in any way might have full opportunity of putting their representations before the Committee, and he was hopeful that many valuable suggestions would be obtained in this manner. After lengthy discussion the scheme, as far as it then stood, was provisionally accepted.

On May 28th, 1920, in glorious weather, the Honorary Degree Ceremony of the University took place in St. George's Hall. It was the first conferment of Honorary Degrees since the war, and it was a very brilliant spectacle. The great hall was crowded, and the cheering students were packed tighter than usual in the long galleries. The organ was pealing forth the March aux Flambeaux, and every one was standing when the great procession, which was to open the proceedings, entered the hall, and for nearly ten minutes moved on, the members taking their places in the tiered seats below the organ facing that huge audience. It was a scene of the most brilliant colour. First came two ushers garbed in robes of black and carrying in their hands long white wands of office, then members of Convocation and of the teaching body of the University in their the academic gowns; then came the officials of the University, civic dignitaries, the Town Clerk and local Mayors, and those who were about to be honoured by the conferment of degrees; and as the latter reached the steps to the raised platform, they took their places in the front row of the audience. Lastly, preceding the mace of the University, and following the Lord Mayor, appeared the Vice-Chancellor, and immediately applause burst forth from the balconies. No sooner had the last member of the procession ascended the platform and taken his seat at the official Chair, than the hall echoed with spontaneous cheers; and the quiet dignity of the proceedings was broken by cheers and more cheers from the galleries as the Vice-Chancellor, Dr. Adami, stood up to begin the ceremony, and the now famous student song to the Vice-Chancellor echoed forth that day for the first time, ending in the chorus:

Johnnie Johnnie George Adami
Johnnie Johnnie George Adami
Johnnie Johnnie George Adami
He's the man to get the cash.

When at last the cheers and song died down, the Vice-Chancellor opened the Congregation in these words :

‘ It is my duty and my great privilege to declare this congregation open, and in doing so to welcome all who have assembled here to honour those whom the University honours itself in honouring. There is not one of them but who, according to his several abilities, has given his time, his energies, to the great cause of higher education. At this the first congregation for the conferment of honorary degrees in which I participate as Vice-Chancellor of this University, I am beyond measure glad that the Senate and Council of the University have selected for special distinction so large a number of those who are citizens of Liverpool (applause), those who as citizens have felt the appeal of the University and of the University ideals, and have nobly answered that appeal ; those who realising what a successful University means to the life and well-being and advancement of the city, have, full of faith through days of small things, done everything in their power to advance a very great, a very potent institution, our University of Liverpool.’

As each recipient mounted the steps for presentation to the Vice-Chancellor, the students raised ringing cheers, and following the admission to the various degrees a brief song was sung, a gag hitting off some peculiar claim of the man of the moment.

James was the first to go up for his degree, and as he stood there in his scarlet Doctor’s robe, cap in hand facing that great audience, his grey hair and features outlined against the brilliant mass of colour behind him, ringing cheers broke forth not only from the students but the audience. Then as the cheers died away, Professor Gonner presented him to the Vice-Chancellor for his degree with these words :

‘ It is a great thing when a man has a cause which fixes his interest, absorbs his leisure, and for which he is willing to make sacrifices. Education is such a cause to James Willcox Alsop. From boyhood he has desired knowledge for himself, and in later life, despite the calls of an exacting and distinguished professional life, he has striven unceasingly to widen the gateway to learning, so that all who will may enter undeterred by considerations of position or means. He has been associated with every stage in the development of University

education in this city, and for nine years was President of the University Council. For sixteen years he has been a member of the Liverpool Education Committee and its Chairman for six years. He can look round on the numerous and crowded secondary schools of the city, on the broad scheme of Scholarships and on the overcrowded University with the just pride that he has had a conspicuous part in their development. It is our good fortune that he remains as Pro-Chancellor to share in the tasks which now confront the University. Men are rightly preferred to bricks, but bricks become necessary when accommodation both for men and books is outworn.

‘Many now present have sat under his Chairmanship, and have learned to respect his skill in management, his unobtrusive guidance of debate, and his fine impartiality. But it is the underlying spirit which stirs admiration, the zeal for wider knowledge and the detestation of all obstacles either of class or prejudice in the way of its attainment. It is in recognition of these high qualities as well as in gratitude for long years of service, that the University desires to admit him to the degree of Doctor of Laws.’

Then taking James by the hand and turning to the Vice-Chancellor, Professor Gonner said: ‘In the name of the Senate and Council I present to you James Willcox Alsop for the degree of Doctor of Laws, *honoris causa*, of this University.’

Then after the conferring of the degree by the Vice-Chancellor, James passed on to his seat on the platform while the students’ voices with their song filled the Hall.

‘James Willcox Alsop you should know
As Chancellor he’s quite a Pro’
We’ll have when he’s beneath the sod,
A marble angel in the Quad.

Chorus

So here’s to you and your degree
It’s bonus gratis, nothing, free,
We’ll now without the slightest fuss
Admit you one of us.”

Then came forward one by one the other recipients of Honorary Degrees, and when each degree had been conferred, the students’ special song for each rang

through the hall followed by the chorus. At the close the Vice-Chancellor pronounced the formula of dismissal :

Salva sit Universitas nostra,
Quod precantes consurgamus

and with this everyone rose, and the organ and voices joined in the National Anthem, which at the end of the verse broke into a march, and the procession then moved on down the hall in its gorgeous colours and in stately step while the audience remained standing.

After a day of celebrations, it was after midnight when we crossed home by the river. The night was extremely beautiful, still and warm with a clear star-lit sky and a moon of wonderful brilliance, whose light shone in a wide pathway across the moving water, and as the steamer turned to cross the river it seemed to follow up this shining track. It was a lovely close to this unforgettable day, and yet a strange sadness touched us, perhaps an echo of the students' song that day ? We were sailing on the river of Time, was it indeed drawing near to the ocean now ? I touched James and he looked round. I knew he had the same thought too ; his beloved work was it indeed to be laid down soon ?

A week later James and I went to Shap Wells, high up on the Shap fells, and stayed there a few days to see if it would be a likely place for our summer holiday. The weather was bright and bracing and the open moorlands alive with the call of the curlews and peewits then building their nests. James was delighted ; the bracing air suited him and we spent the most peaceful, happy days wandering over the moors and listening to and watching the birds, and sometimes reading aloud. We made up our minds to come back in the late summer, bringing my sister and a nephew with us, but we could only have rooms for a fortnight.

In the meantime James had a bad season of hay fever, and was busy all through it with his education meetings in London, and with his endless meetings about teacher's salaries in Liverpool also.

On June 29th the revised scale of salaries for head and assistant teachers in Elementary Schools was adopted by the Education Committee, and Alderman Burgess, in recommending the adoption, said that at the request of the teachers, a special *Joint* Committee had been appointed consisting of seven members of the Education Committee and seven representing the Teachers' Association, much on the model of the Burnham Committee. They had sat seventeen times, and he wished to express their great indebtedness to the Chairman of the Education Committee, Mr. Alsop, who took the Chair at these meetings. The new scale, he said, had now been adopted by both panels of the Joint Committee.

On the following day, James attended the sports at 'The Alsop High School,' the first that had been held, and made a speech to the boys, and the prizes were delivered; and I think it was that afternoon that James promised them a Challenge Cup before the next year's sports, and during his illness in the following spring, and with the Director's kind help, he was able to send it to them during the last few weeks of his life.

On July 2nd, 1920, the Director, Mr. Legge, gave an Evening Entertainment to the Education Office Staff, and we were invited to join the party, and I remember with what enthusiasm James joined in the entertainments, and it was an extremely gay evening. On the following day came the Graduation Ceremony at the University for the Graduates of the year, and a Special Honorary Degree was given to Lord Robert Cecil, who had been prevented through illness from receiving it at the Honorary Degree ceremony earlier.

On the 6th, there was a great 'At Home' and dance in the Town Hall to the members of the Institution of Naval Architects then visiting the city, a very brilliant evening. The following night we had friends to dinner at Ulverscroft, some of whom had come to the congress. On the 8th James was again in London, attending the Prime Minister's Committee on the Classics, and the following days attending the Burnham Secondary and Elementary Teachers' Committees, and on the 14th was present at a luncheon given by Lord Burnham at the Savoy Hotel.

Our holiday that summer, spent at Shap Wells and Grasmere, was a very successful one, and we had various friends with us. The last few days we spent alone at Sedbergh, but the inn was uncomfortable and the weather grey and bleak, and we cut our holiday short and spent the last days of it at home before James took up his busy work again.

In October the Education Committee held an interesting meeting in the Town Hall, James presiding and the Lord Mayor present, for the purpose of appealing to the business men of Liverpool to co-operate with the new education scheme for giving part-time education during the day to boys and girls from 14 to 16 employed in their offices when the new Act of 1918 came into force, as it was then expected it would do in about a year's time. James made an earnest appeal for every help to be given to make it easy for these young people to continue their studies at an age when they were likely to reap such a much more lasting benefit than in the earlier years of their school life.

At this time the University was beginning its new session. The public appeal for funds was still going on; sufficient money seemed unable to be raised without it, and the enormous growth in the number of students, and the increase of new and important

work, made it imperative to do something drastic and at once to meet the growing need for largely increased funds. The appeal met with success though not to the extent hoped for, but it did one great good—it made the University more widely known and widened rapidly the interest taken in its welfare.

On November 26th, 1920, when James spoke for the last time at the University Court, and as Pro-Chancellor moved the adoption of the reports for the year, he warmly congratulated the Vice-Chancellor upon the success which had attended his splendid work. The year, he said, had been the most wonderful in the history of Liverpool University or any University, for he could think of no occasion on which a University had more than doubled its students in a single year, and in which it had had to cope with such increasing difficulties owing to that fact. No other University had had that experience on so large a scale. In 1917-18 the last year of the war, the students numbered 800, the following year they rose to 1,500 as the young men were beginning to return from active service, and last session they were 2,600, many having to be turned away for want of accommodation. He went on to show how this huge increase had been a great strain on the buildings and equipment of the University, and on the University teaching staff. They had done what was possible to increase the temporary accommodation by putting up huts in the quadrangle for the Chemical Department and taking new houses, but what was wanted were large new buildings of a permanent character equipped on the same scale as the present buildings. They had appointed, where possible, additional Professors and Lecturers, but a University Staff could not be created in a few months, and their rule always was to secure the very best men. The strain had been nobly borne. Professors and Lecturers had been repeating lectures

three or four times to relays of students, addressing larger audiences and conducting larger classes than was desirable in the best interests of the students, and had been obliged to abandon for the time a good deal of the research work which was an equal part with the teaching of the University. There had also been a great strain on the finances of the University. Students' fees represented only about one-third of the cost of instruction, and the rise in numbers, though not meaning any actual loss in income, meant a much larger increase in expenditure. He went on to show how in spite of the £10,000 from the Government, a *non*-recurring grant, and the increased yearly grant from various corporations and the Lancashire County Council and certain local authorities, there would be a serious deficit on the year's work, such as they had never had before; they were trying to meet this in every way they could and the 'Appeal' was still in progress, and he hoped the response to it would be even greater in the future. The students were, he said, an unusually earnest and keen set of men and women. 1,100 of these students were ex-service men, and a very large proportion of them were in the University by reason of the help the Government was giving in the shape of payment of fees and a moderate maintenance grant, without which few would have been able to come to the University, the value of whose training the Government was recognising in a way it had never done before. There had never before been such a crisis—a war which had taken such toll of the population, but he questioned whether, had it occurred twenty years before, the Government would have even thought of such a scheme of helping ex-service men to go to the University. The importance must be realised of this Government recognition of the advantages of University training, not only in Liverpool but in all other Universities. At least 10,000 young men were

being assisted in this magnificent way of helping the discharged soldier.

The 1,500 other young men and women who had not been to the war were a large increase over the pre-war numbers, and the first reason for that was the increase and improvement in the secondary education of the city and neighbourhood. The number of children in the Secondary Schools had gone up by nearly 100 per cent. since the beginning of the war, and that gave more material for the University, while the city and the local authorities had given increased help to those who were unable to pay fees themselves. Thus, through the Secondary Schools, they were able to pick out boys and girls who were capable of benefiting by University education. In the old days it was rare to see the son or daughter of a working man as a University student. That was quite common now, and would, he hoped, become even more common in the future.

The new thirst for University training was amongst the most hopeful signs of the times, and it was the *new modern Universities* of the big towns that had created the supply and encouraged the thirst. They could not take the students to the charming country towns of Oxford and Cambridge, but they could bring something of Oxford and Cambridge into the most crowded city of the country. The modern Universities had done that. They could do more than Oxford and Cambridge in some respects; they could make the work of the University more in touch with the business and professional world. By being in the close vicinity of large hospitals, large engineering works, large chemical works with their laboratories, it was possible to bring students into much closer contact with the life of medicine, engineering and chemistry than was possible in Oxford or Cambridge. The work of the modern University had hardly begun, and he

looked forward, he said, to the time when the students would number far more than at present, and when the University would be able to provide for them an even wider and deeper course of learning than was possible now, with larger and more up to date libraries and laboratories, more facilities for the training of the body as well as the mind. When the historian of 100 years hence described the growth and progress of the modern University, he hoped that he would look upon the University of Liverpool as occupying no mean place amongst their number.

This was the last University Court James was to attend, and his speech and these last words specially, seemed to gather together the points of the great change and growth of educational opportunity in Liverpool, and one cannot help seeing how James's early dream was being fulfilled, and how in the ardent work of a long life time he had helped to widen the gateway to learning so that all who *desired* and *strove* could enter in.

At the close of November James had the last of his University dinners at the Exchange Club, and about 30 were present, and a few days later, during Sir Alfred and Lady Dale's visit to Liverpool, they came out to dine with us and Vice-Chancellor Adami came to meet them.

December was bitterly cold, but James kept well, and for some months he had been out seldom in the evening. During this quieter time we had done much reading together, often re-reading old favourite novels, which we had not read for years, enjoying them again in quite new ways. He seemed to look forward to these quiet evenings in his library more and more.

Very shortly before Christmas we went to our last evening party. It was a very large and a very beautiful dinner party at Dr. Glynn's house in Rodney Street, the house where Mr. Gladstone was born. The night was bitterly cold with a keen frost and icy air. The

following day James was in bed with a cold, but it seemed to pass off quickly and again he was hard at work as usual.

When Christmas came, his partner, Mr. Armstrong, came to us straight from a nursing home, and was to spend Christmas with us and stay on until he was strong again. We were both delighted to have him and we had a quiet but very bright Christmas.

On Christmas Day several old friends came in to dinner, and afterwards James was Father Christmas and arrived with a great knocking at the front door, bringing a hamper of gifts for the household. The servants all came in and we had a lively time, Father Christmas keeping us merry while handing out his gifts. The hall was hung with holly and mistletoe and a big fire burning and we were very festive and merry.

The Christmas days and the last days of the year were singularly happy ones, and it seemed as if James and Mr. Armstrong entered on a new and deeper friendship every day. Mr. Armstrong saw James on holiday, so free and so gay, so tender and thoughtful for every one, so full of enjoyment of beautiful things, so quietly happy. He saw him and knew him in his home.

CHAPTER VII

1920—1921

‘ When our days are done,
And the last utterance of doom must fall,
Is the doom anything
Memorable for its apparelling ;
The bearing of man facing it is all.’

The autumn of 1920 had been an anxious and busy one. The question of teachers’ salaries had certainly worried James a good deal. It seemed like the Irish question never to find any settlement possible ; whatever was arranged one week, after urgent and earnest thought and endeavour to meet all with fairness and justice, was certain to be upset the week after by some sudden outburst of discontent, which was depressing to anyone as eager as he was to come to a fair and a just settlement.

The University too, with all its great strides forward, was running into debt, and seemed bowing its head to the force of the storm and not striding forward with quite so free a march as of yore. Large numbers of ex-service students remained, and the grants covered but a third of the expense of these students. There was some question about these grants being continued, and with every other expense increased, for the first time in its history the University could not pay its way. All these things gave James anxiety and worry. But at Christmas he seemed to throw off these troubles and was more than usually bright and well.

In the early days of the New Year, however, he

got up one morning with a pain in his side which kept him in bed next day and was pronounced pleurisy. In a few days it subsided but it did not go, and the days went by till March and he was still an invalid. In spite of this trouble about the lung, it was then thought best that he should get up and move about and presently go out. He was visibly weaker and thinner and able to take less food, but he was full of cheerfulness and always eager to try and do more to shake off the illness. During these months he had kept in touch with his work, having a shorthand clerk out each day, and in the late afternoon his friends and fellow-workers came over to see him, bringing him news of all kinds from his beloved City, and University, and his interests were as keen as ever.

In March, before Easter came, we went to Llandudno, as he fancied a change might do him good and the doctors encouraged it for him, but it made him worse; he was laid up all the time and came back with less vigour and very weary, motoring most of the way to avoid fatigue and cold. The doctors seemed more anxious, but they agreed he should attend two or three important meetings in Liverpool, and at the last one, I think the Education Committee, he was congratulated on the way he had conducted a very difficult meeting; but he arrived home so utterly exhausted that there was no question afterwards of his attending any more meetings. On Good Friday he saw both doctors, and was told again that the trouble was pleurisy, but that there *was* the faintest chance it might be more serious, and he knew that day that if those fears were realised there was nothing that could be done for him. He asked many searching questions, but the doctors, having once lightly expressed this remote fear, did their utmost to dispel it.

The following day he was less well and he never left his room again. A few days later he resigned his

membership of the Burnham Committees, and afterwards received a letter of much regret and appreciation from Mr. Selby Bigge, in the course of which he said : 'you have the comfort of knowing that you have done more than your share in the advancement of education. You may well be proud of your record, and though you have sometimes crossed swords with us at the Board of Education, we know only too well that your only desire has been to promote the public interest.'

On April 19th James wrote to the Deputy-Chairman of the Liverpool Education Committee :

DEAR MR. HARRISON JONES,

I deeply regret to have to ask you to communicate to my colleagues my resignation of the Chairmanship of the Education Committee.

I have been more or less ill since the beginning of the year, and my medical advisers now tell me that, even under the most favourable circumstances, it will be many months before I can hope to resume any active work. You will, therefore, see that it is impossible for me to retain the Chairmanship.

It is with real sorrow that I quit work in which I continue to take the greatest interest, and the importance of which seems ever to increase.

In conclusion may I express to you and the other members of the Committee, and also to Mr. Legge and the office Staff, my warm thanks for the kindness and support which I have always received from them.

Yours faithfully,
JAMES W. ALSOP.

In the days that followed many ardent appeals came to him that he would reconsider this decision, and offers were made of every help that could be given in carrying on the work for him, if only he would wait until he was better ; but though so grateful for all the offers of help, and for the wonderful words of appreciation of his work and influence, he definitely resigned.

He suffered much in the early part of the day

through an ever increasing exhaustion, but in the late afternoon he revived wonderfully and became bright and very cheerful, so that in the hour after tea which was set apart for visits from his friends, it was often difficult for those who came to realise how very ill he was.

The weather was almost always brilliant; his windows were wide open, showing the distant beautiful view of Welsh mountains, and his room was flooded with sunshine. He had many flowers beside him from his friends and from his beloved garden, and books and papers lay near him. In this hour after tea his strength seemed to return, and with it a great happiness. He looked forward to this daily coming of his friends, and so many came, some interested in one thing, some in another, and he welcomed and was keenly interested in all the news they brought him, but as the days went on their love seemed what he treasured most. The world seemed passing away.

On the 18th of May, the afternoon before he died, he summoned all his strength and insisted on the doctors telling him if all hope was over, and when they told him that it was, he still questioned them as to the probable time he had to live, and he knew then it could only be a few days at most.

After the doctors had gone, he saw Mr. Legge for a few brief minutes, listening in spite of restlessness and pain to the news he brought, and was still full of interest, but later he grew more restless still.

The night came at last, after the long summer evening, calm and beautiful, and he, too, grew less restless; often he seemed almost sleeping; then he would wake and think that I who watched beside him must be tired, and he would stretch out his hand and touch me.

The dawn came creeping across the sky. It was

May deepening into summer, with all the freshness of early morning wafting through the wide open windows, the birds began to twitter and to burst into song, the fuller light began to break across the sky, everything was brightening, a smile came, too, on his face, and turning he said 'I am so happy, dear, oh, *so* happy.'

The birds sang on in full chorus, the daylight grew more bright, the eyes so full of love closed and in great peace he fell asleep.

CONCLUSION

I HAVE written often of James's social life because I believe it had so great an influence on his public life. He had many friends, and learnt to know well a great many very different people, and in this way learnt to know human nature very thoroughly, and when he came to deal with men and women later in a larger and more public way, his wise judgment of what was needed and what could be done was greatly brought about through his knowledge of human character and his keen interest in everyone and everything he came across.

He looked upon the life of a solicitor as a great trust, and as a profession which held one of the finest opportunities for helping others; and in reading the many wonderful letters that came to me after his death, I could not help feeling how great a friend and guide he had been to very many, in times of trouble and perplexity and in times of great sorrow.

He was always a fighter where difficulties were concerned. He looked upon difficulties as great opportunities and felt the full joy of eventful living; difficulties had indeed been to him door-ways through which he had fought his way to fuller knowledge, larger hopes, nobler understanding. It was something of this same joy in overcoming difficulties that made him such an enthusiastic climber in the Alps, he was allured by the beauty and the mystery of the snow and ice.

Once, when his father took him as a boy to a Phrenologist, the first thing he said was: 'This young man is without fear.' My own fears often

surprised James greatly, but no one was ever kinder or more considerate of them.

He worked hard himself and he expected much from others. I am told that there were those who thought he expected too much, and who looked upon him as hard and severe, but I am quite sure that those who were ready to work knew what his friendship could be and how every effort made drew them to him. Once I heard one of his University friends say, that it was his modesty which led him to expect so much from others with whom he worked, that he had no idea of how very much he gave himself and that quite naturally he expected the same from others. I think this was very near the truth.

In talking to those who worked most closely with him, one thing struck me, that whoever worked with him in any one field of his many activities, either in law or on the Education Committee under his Chairmanship, or in his work for secondary education, each spoke of that special piece of work as being James's chief interest and work in life. He had a power of work and a wealth of interest which was expended on everything he took up almost lavishly, but to me, if one interest held his heart more than another and from first to last, it was the University, and every other interest, great as it was, was but leading towards this, the aim and goal of his work, the University of Liverpool in which was embedded his ideal of the modern University, open to all who were ready to work for it and free to even the poorest son or daughter of Liverpool if eager to work and to win. In the resolution, passed by the Council and Senate of the University assembled in special meeting, a few days after James died, to record the heavy loss sustained by the University in the death of their Pro-Chancellor, are these words: 'To no living

man—perhaps to no one man—does the University movement owe more. His labour and interest in the movement extended over a period of 40 years during the whole of which he was actively engaged in forwarding the work.’

As I sit thinking of James, he comes back to me, so quiet, so cultured, such a gentleman, so tender, so strong, so reliable, so wise and so trustful, so selfless and so intensely kind. Without greed or jealousy of any kind and with such a great warm heart, thinking of others, planning for others, loving his country, his city and his home, and so surprised and so grateful for every little sign of love that came to him.

His was a nature so lovable but so restrained, that it might be years and often *was* years before some people ever guessed or felt the thrill of that vibrating joyous life and love within him. When they did feel it, they were entirely captured and loved him to the end. It needed this love to bring out the joyousness; you had only to find him out and he opened like a flower and became the brightest and gayest of the company.

One of the light operas he was most fond of was ‘Carmen,’ and on many a winter evening in the library at Ulverscroft he would seize the sofa blanket quite suddenly and dance down the room, flinging the cloth and drawing it back while singing, with all his heart and energy, the Toreador’s song from ‘Carmen.’

Sometimes he would give me the benefit of ‘John Wellington Wells,’ and would skim about on the carpet, hardly seeming to touch the floor. I used to say to him: ‘What would your friends in Liverpool think of this?’ and then he would sit down and laugh with me over it.

There were unplumbed depths in James’s soul,

where the silence was profound, but there were hidden depths of passion there for duty, work, his fellow-creatures and God.

He was very sparing in expression of his own feelings, there were no I's in his talk; it was the most difficult thing in the world to him to speak of himself, and he seldom, if ever, did so. We gathered all he was from all he did, and from the passionate energy and patience with which he pursued great ideals through his whole life, and those of us who loved him best learnt to love him the more, because no secret or confidence he had received from another ever passed his lips again.

In these later days, when such an insatiable demand has arisen for the cover to be taken from everything, it is a great rest only to think of anything that still holds something beyond our gaze, round which our love ever lingers with imagination and trust and hope. The greatest things are like this: they defy our grasp. Souls like his have something of eternity about them, they go on expressing themselves when he who was with us has passed by, and they still touch the world and lead it.

James had nothing of the missionary about him; he never preached, but his own life and work attracted people. There it was going steadily forward, his public career filled with high endeavour and useful performance, his work never ceasing, always widening and growing, touching this thing and touching that, with an influence and a knowledge and a purity of aim that raised the tone of life about it and made it less selfish and, I like to believe, purified the public life of the city.

I think people were sometimes puzzled as to how he had got this strength and knowledge, this influence which guided men and movements right in difficult and struggling times; he seldom spoke of his past or

himself ; he gave them no clue to the things that had been. The fact was he did not think about himself, for he was enthusiastic to a degree over things outside himself, and his thoughts were so set to the very end of his life on the possibilities of better things to come, that he never had time to dwell on what was past.

When he lay dying and he knew it, I am sure he was looking forward then as never before ; for him there never had been and there never could be any looking back, and his work was laid down in perfect trust that it would be taken up by others and carried on to greater things in the future.

Bells of Memory, ringing o'er the city
Lost, and heard again,
Calling men to faith and love and service
Again—Again—Again.

Report of the Speech delivered by the Right Honourable the Earl of Crawford and Balcarres, P.C., K.T., at the opening of the Alsop High School for Boys, on February 23rd, 1926. Reprinted by permission from 'The Liverpool Daily Post.'

The Earl of Crawford spoke of the late Alderman Alsop as a great and noble citizen, who had devoted his life to promote the education of the city. Alderman Alsop was unable to satisfy his own early ambition of going to a University, but by strenuous work and strong character he took his degree and threw himself into the movement of providing in an easy fashion for others what he only accomplished by tremendous effort for himself. The school which the civic authorities had named after him was the most modern and best equipped, and, speaking broadly, the finest school of its kind in the North of England. It was for those who were prepared to act up to Mr. Alsop's example to draw a full measure of profit from the new school.

'I am always glad,' continued his Lordship, 'when a public body does honour to its best citizens by dedicating to their memory some public institutions. We give very grand, and often very inappropriate, names to our streets and squares, to say nothing of our houses, but I think we are apt to be behind hand in naming our schools and public institutions after our own great people of the past. I am glad that this school should have a definite personal name, thus associating it with a great personal character.'

WISDOM IN THE USE OF KNOWLEDGE.

Turning to the scholars present, his Lordship advised them to learn to use the school and not to be content with merely attending it. Between these two things, he said, there was all the difference in the world. The secondary school gave a form of training at the moment of a scholar's life when he ought to be most impressionable, and when the full value of education really began to make its impact on the mind and character. Although an institution of that kind was designed to impart knowledge, that was not the only advantage that pupils could gain from their being identified with the Alsop School. They needed not only knowledge but wisdom to know how to utilise that knowledge. The knowledge they acquired must be directed into the right channels if it was to be as fruitful and as serviceable to the community as those responsible for the school desired.

It was in the secondary and technical schools that wisdom in the use of knowledge began to emerge. The pupil must learn to think, must learn to grapple with problems which would present themselves not only during school life but hereafter in business, sport, domestic affairs, and public life. He must avail himself of the opportunity to equip himself with that knowledge which was the weapon and armour of our times. But at the same time he must acquire character, judgment, discretion, and inspiration in order to utilise to the full the advantages now offered to him.



The Alsop High School for Boys

B490 93325 4

